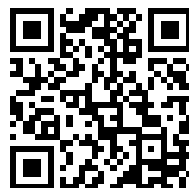

This is a reproduction of a library book that was digitized by Google as part of an ongoing effort to preserve the information in books and make it universally accessible.

GoogleTM books

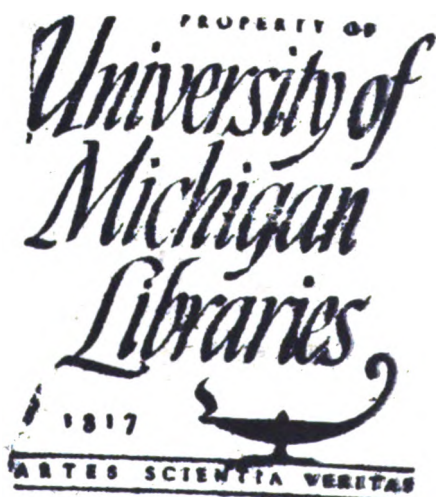
<https://books.google.com>



B 363249

Historical Records
of the
16th Battalion
NORTHUMBERLAND
FUSILIERS







**THIS VOLUME IS PRESENTED BY THE NEWCASTLE
AND GATESHEAD INCORPORATED CHAMBER OF
COMMERCE TO COMMEMORATE THE SERVICES OF**

**WITH THE 16th (SERVICE) BATTALION NORTHUMBER-
LAND FUSILIERS.**

1914-1918

HISTORIES OF THE NORTHUMBERLAND FUSILIERS

HON. GENERAL EDITOR: ALFRED BREWIS.

VOL. I. 9TH SERVICE BATTALION (in Preparation).

VOL. II. 16TH SERVICE BATTALION.
Captain C. H. COOKE, M.C.

VOL. III. 18TH SERVICE BATTALION: PIONEERS.
Lieut.-Col. J. SHAKESPEAR, O.M.G., C.I.E., D.S.O.

VOL. IV. 19TH SERVICE BATTALION: PIONEERS.
Captain C. H. COOKE, M.C.

**HISTORICAL RECORDS
OF THE 16th (SERVICE) BATTALION
NORTHUMBERLAND FUSILIERS**

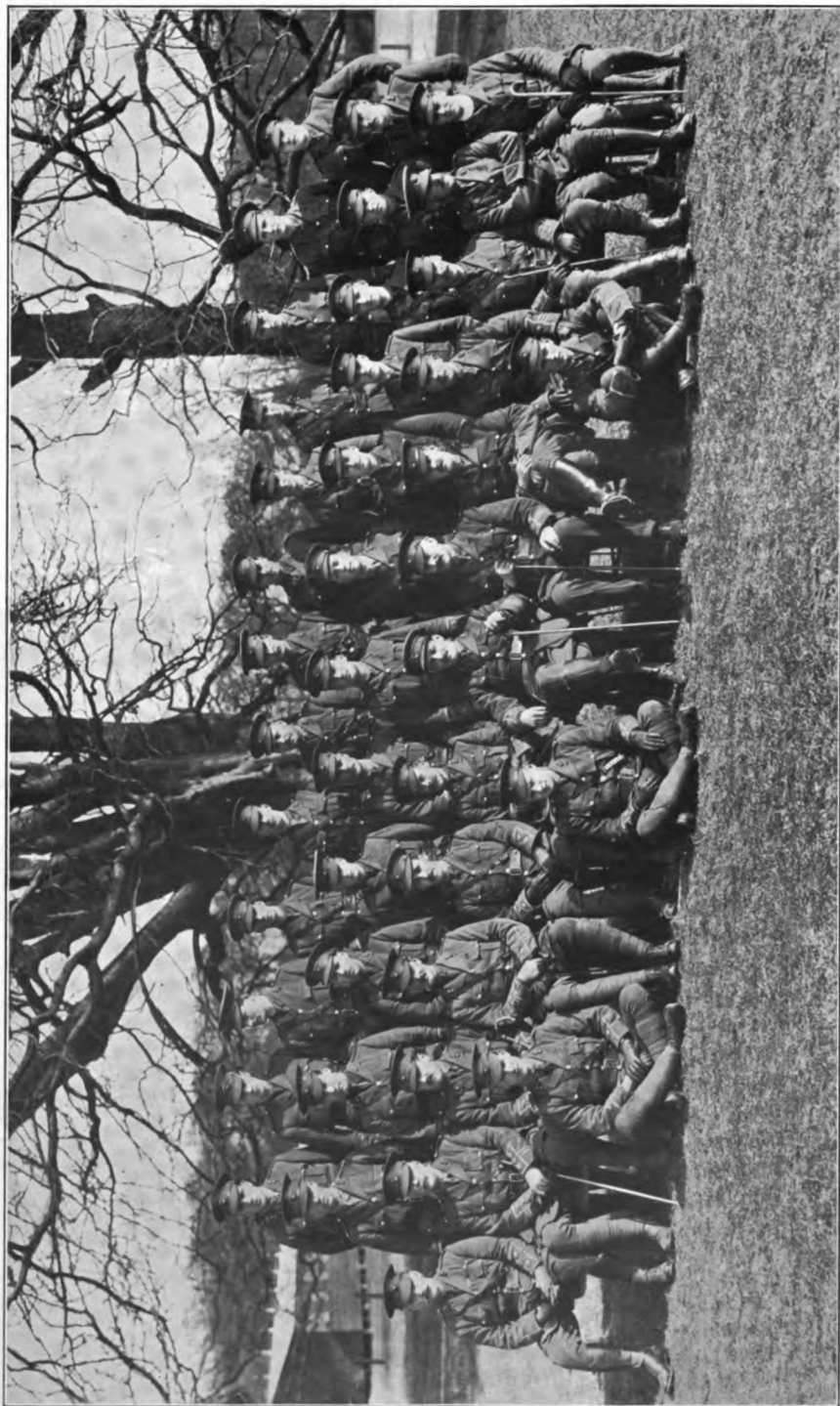


Photo by]

OFFICERS OF THE BATTALION, ALNWICK, APRIL, 1915.

[*Jas. Bacon & Sons.*

HISTORICAL RECORDS

of the

16th (Service)
Northumberland Battalion
of the Tynesiders

Officers of the Battalion: April, 1915. Key.

BACK ROW: 2nd Lieut. V. Duglinson, 2nd Lieut. W. R. Ramsay, 2nd Lieut. P. H. Graham, 2nd Lieut. J. Southern, 2nd Lieut. R. W. Falconer, 2nd Lieut. J. Adams, 2nd Lieut. R. S. Watson, 2nd Lieut. W. Avery, 2nd Lieut. L. Edwards, 2nd Lieut. D. Hall, 2nd Lieut. F. A. George, 2nd Lieut. L. Proctor, 2nd Lieut. R. McLean.

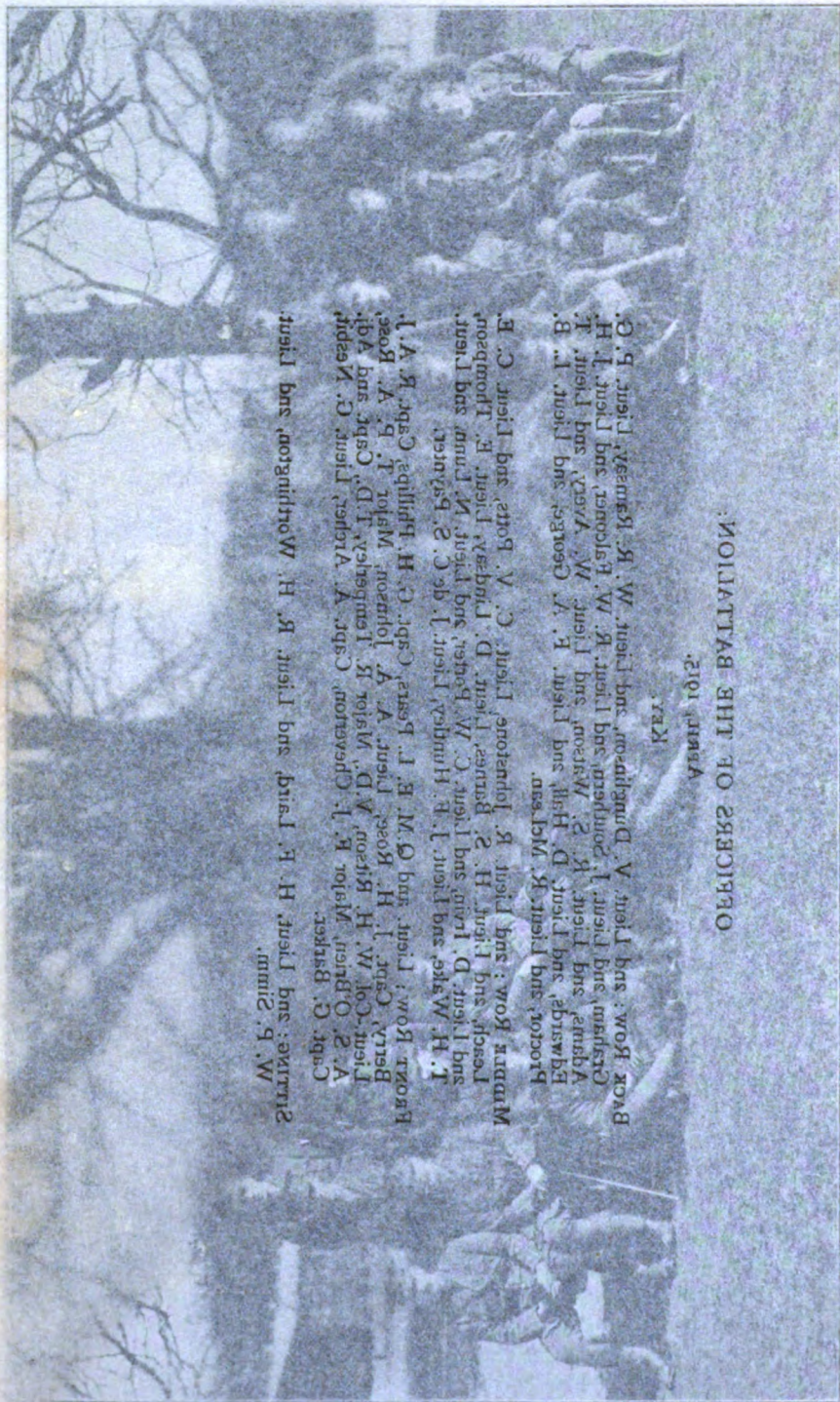
MIDDLE ROW: 2nd Lieut. R. Johnstone, Lieut. C. W. Potts, 2nd Lieut. C. Leach, 2nd Lieut. H. S. Barnes, Lieut. D. Lindsay, Lieut. E. Thompson, 2nd Lieut. D. Irvin, 2nd Lieut. C. W. Potts, 2nd Lieut. N. Lunn, 2nd Lieut. T. H. Wake, 2nd Lieut. J. F. Huntley, Lieut. J. de C. S. Paynter.

FRONT ROW: Lieut. and Q.M. E. L. Pears, Capt. G. H. Phillips, Capt. R. A. J. Berry, Capt. J. H. Rose, Lieut. A. A. Johnson, Major T. P. A. Rose, Lieut.-Col. W. H. Ritson, V.D., Major R. Temperley, T.D., Capt. and Adj. A. S. O'Brien, Major F. J. Cheverton, Capt. A. Archer, Lieut. G. Vestib, Capt. G. Barker.

SITTING: 2nd Lieut. H. F. Laird, 2nd Lieut. R. H. Worthington, 2nd Lieut. W. P. Simm.

Published for private distribution by the Council
of the Newcastle and Gateshead Incorporated
Chamber of Commerce, The Guildhall, New-
castle-upon-Tyne

1923



M. B. Zimm
 Stalme: and Gient, H. E. Gaid' and Gient, B. H. Wotrington' and Gient
 Cbr: C. Bette
 V. S. O'Brien, Major E. T. Creighton' Cbr: Y. Vicker' Gient, G. Nesbit
 Gient, Col. M. H. Btson' A. D. Major B. Lembench, J. D. Cbr: and Agi
 Baul, Cbr: J. H. Rose' Gient, Y. V. Johnson' Major J. B. V. Rose
 Brock. Kom: Gient and G. M. E. T. Lenz' Cbr: G. H. Briffiba Cbr: R. V. J.
 T. H. Mize' and Gient, J. P. Hurdal' Gient, J. de C. S. Baidet
 and Gient, D. Laid' and Gient, C. M. Bette' and Gient, M. Ginn' and Gient
 Gensch' and Gient, H. S. Bette' Gient, D. Gindal' Gient, E. Trombsou
 Widdie Kom: and Gient, B. Johnson' Gient, C. A. Bette' and Gient, C. E.
 Brocton' and Gient, R. Wiet son
 Equande' and Gient, D. Hail' and Gient, E. V. Geodes' and Gient, L. B.
 Vgins' and Gient, B. S. Merson' and Gient, M. Vied' and Gient, J.
 Gatzman' and Gient, J. Bonner' and Gient, B. M. Bricourt' and Gient, J. H.
 Brock Kom: and Gient, A. Dunsington' and Gient, M. B. Barmes' Gient, B. G.

Kell
 Vener' idir

OFFICERS OF THE BATTALION

HISTORICAL RECORDS

of the

16th (Service) Battalion
Northumberland Fusiliers

By

Captain C. H. Cooke, M.C.

Published for private distribution by the Council
of the Newcastle and Gateshead Incorporated
Chamber of Commerce, The Guildhall, New-
castle-upon-Tyne * * * 1923

D
347

.147

c77

667120-013



TO
OUR COMRADES
WHO FELL IN THE GREAT WAR
1914 1918

Their Name
Liveth for evermore

Any further communication on this subject should be addressed to—

The Secretary,
War Office,
London, S.W.
and the following number quoted.

20/General No./3167 (A.G.I.)

**War Office,
London, S.W.**

JA September, 1914.

Sir,

Referring to your telegram of the 8th September in which you accede to the conditions for the formation of a battalion on Tyneside, I am commanded by the Army Council to inform you that they have much pleasure in accepting your patriotic offer to raise this battalion.

You are requested to place yourself in communication with the General Officer Commanding-in-Chief Northern Command with regard to raising and training the battalion, and all other questions that may arise in connection with it.

I am,

Sir,

Your obedient Servant,

R. B. Wode

Herbert Shaw, Esq.,
Sheriff,
Newcastle on Tyne.

We welcome back our bravest and our best!—
Ah me! not all! some come not with the rest,
Who went forth brave and bright as any here!
In these brave ranks I only see the gaps,
Thinking of our dear ones whom the dumb turf wraps,
Dark to the triumph which they died to gain:
Fittier may others greet the living,
For me the past is unforgiving;
I with uncovered head
Salute the sacred dead,
Who went, and who return not. Say not so!
'Tis not the grapes of Canaan that repay,
But the high faith that failed not by the way;
Virtue treads paths that end not in the grave;
No bar of endless night exiles the brave;
And to the saner mind
We rather seem the dead that stayed behind.
Blow, trumpets, all your exultations blow!
For never shall their aureoled presence lack:
I see them muster in a gleaming row,
With ever-youthful brows that nobler show;
We find in our dull road their shining track;
In every nobler mood
We feel the orient of their spirit glow,
Part of our life's unalterable good
Of all our saintlier aspiration;
They come transfigured back,
Secure from change in their high-hearted ways,
Beautiful evermore, and with the rays
Of morn on their white Shields of Expectation!

RUSSELL LOWELL.

PREFACE

I DESIRE to thank all the officers, non-commissioned officers and men whose notes, diaries, anecdotes and suggestions have aided me in the compilation of these Records. It is impossible to name them, as many prefer to be anonymous. The private papers lent me by Colonel Ritson have been invaluable in enabling me to place the events more in perspective. Major ——— might think that such and such an episode was worthy of fuller treatment; Captain ——— prefers the omission of another incident; Mr ——— may be grieved that more is not made of a certain attack; while Private ———, whose opinion I esteem, would add a special chapter, giving the point of view of the only man that mattered, the man with the rifle. I trust that, in the general narrative, the story of a fine battalion is fully presented. The incidents recorded may suffice to recall others, and be a source of perpetual renewing of memories.

A criticism levelled at the companion volume ("Records of the 19th Battalion") was that individual exploits were not sufficiently elaborated. The same criticism can be applied to this volume, but the reply is simple. Over 8,000 men were on the roll of the 16th Battalion. Even allowing only half a page per man—a ridiculously inadequate amount—the volume would be somewhat unwieldy, and further, would be a strain on the generosity of the Chamber of Commerce. For who can deny that every man who did a tour in the line was worthy of a special mention?

A battalion was only a small unit in the Great War; in the story of a battalion scant attention only can be given to the colossal administrative work that kept the unit going as a fighting force. To help to a clearer realisation of the work "behind the line" several extracts from Sir Douglas Haig's Despatches are given. These serve, in the main, to explain the reasons for many things which sorely puzzled most soldiers. They are the deep back-

ground of which the story of the battalion is one of the highlights in the foreground.

The nominal rolls presented much difficulty, owing to the lapse of time. That it has been possible to publish them is entirely due to the labour of Mr Alfred Brewis and 16/50 Pte. H. Walker. They have spent many hours of painstaking care in the compilation; they worried the Records Office, at York; and, from many sources, gathered further particulars. That they have succeeded so well is a tribute to their keen interest in the volume.

Thanks are also due to Major L. B. Proctor, M.C., Captains W. T. Richardson, C. A. F. Stewart (Manchesters), Lieutenant Webb, M.C. (18th Battalion), Messrs Alfred Brewis, J. Penman, Jas. Bacon & Sons, G. C. Beresford, Sarony & Co., J. Weston & Son, the Proprietors of the *Illustrated Chronicle* and the Air Ministry for permission to reproduce photographs. The drawings by Lieutenant A. K. Lawrence (19th Battalion) and Claude Wade (16th Battalion) add a unique touch to the book. To these two artists I wish to express my thanks.

C. H. COOKE.

ROTHSBURY,

February, 1923.

FOREWORD

BY MAJOR-GENERAL SIR C. D. SHUTE, K.C.B., K.C.M.G.

DURING the greater part of the period covered by this little History of the 16th Northumberland Fusiliers during the Great War, I had the honour to command the 32nd Division of which they formed a part.

I could wish that it were possible in a History such as this to give a more detailed record of doings and exploits of the battalion and of individuals from day to day so that all the friends and relations of the officers and men of the 16th Northumberland Fusiliers could at last realise all that was so well and so cheerfully accomplished by this gallant battalion.

It was essential, during the fighting, to do all that we could to prevent the enemy from estimating our strength at any named point and thereby forecasting our plans. The veil of secrecy hung heavily over the troops. This veil has now lifted and by degrees all that was accomplished by the British Armies and Navies in all parts of the Globe is becoming known.

The History of the 16th Northumberland Fusiliers is typical of that of most battalions. All did their best, unselfishly and with the utmost gallantry.

The 16th Northumberland Fusiliers had its full share of hard fighting. Its successes were many, its failures few. Well commanded and looked after by its officers the offensive spirit and *esprit de corps* of the battalion was such that it could always be relied upon to accomplish its task and, reading between the lines of this record, it will be seen that this was what the battalion thought of. The fatigue and damage of continuous fighting left little time for regimental officers to study the general trend of the operations. Their area of vision was necessarily limited, and their one absorbing interest was in their own success and that of the units in their immediate neighbourhood.

Again Regimental Histories such as this will show the fine spirit with which the troops bore the hardships of war. They took the rough with the smooth and made the best of it.

During the short periods out of the line the troubles of the past were forgotten and all cheerfully set themselves to prepare for any further task which might be set them.

During these periods we shall none of us forget the kindness and hospitality of our French hosts, who, when many of them had lost their all, never failed to be grateful to us for our help or to do all they could for our comfort.

I hope that all the friends and relations of the officers and men of the 16th Northumberland Fusiliers will appreciate the gallantry and devotion to duty of the battalion and will gain some knowledge of the part that it played. More than all I hope that the relations of those who were killed or wounded will realise that their sufferings were not in vain. They died and suffered for England, and to preserve those at home, and they will ever live in the memories of those who had the honour to command them in war.

C. D. SHUTE, *Major-General*

Commanding 32nd Division

(March, 1917, to April, 1918)

HEADQUARTERS, 4th Division,
COLOCHESTER.

APPRECIATION

BY BRIGADIER-GENERAL C. YATMAN, C.M.G., D.S.O.

THE 16th (Service) Battalion was in the Brigade under my command for fifteen months. Whether training at home before going to France, during the winter carrying on trench warfare, or in the more active operations commencing with the Somme battles their conduct was worthy of the best traditions of the famous County and Town from which they sprang, and of the Regiment to which they belong. They kept smiling and killed Boches with great success in the most adverse circumstances.

Their *morale* was always good. All good Fusiliers start the military week at *réveillé* on Mondays to the tune, on the drums, of "Old Father Balls." The battalion, having had a gruelling at Thiepval, came out. The next morning the drums duly played *réveillé* to make up for previously being unable to do so owing to the battle. This episode I consider worthy of record as evidence of the good moral and soldierly spirit of the battalion. A few deep breaths, and the men were ready to get their own back.

When *morale* is good the rest is easy. When the next big war starts (there are many yet before the millennium) I am sure the 16th Battalion Northumberland Fusiliers will once more and at the earliest opportunity become a fighting unit of His Majesty's Army.

C. YATMAN,
Brigadier-General

GUADALOUPE HOUSE,
BORDON.

CONTENTS

	PAGE
PREFACE	xi.
FOREWORD. BY MAJOR-GENERAL SIR C. D. SHUTE, K.C.B., K.C.M.G.	xiii.
APPRECIATION. BY BRIGADIER-GENERAL C. YATMAN, C.M.G., D.S.O.	xv
CHAPTER	
I. THE RAISING OF THE BATTALION	1
II. EARLY TRAINING AT NEWCASTLE	4
III. ALNWICK	9
IV. CRAMLINGTON	13
V. CATTERICK BRIDGE AND CODFORD ST MARY	17
VI. FRANCE—FIRST IMPRESSIONS	23
VII. UP THE LINE	27
VIII. REST BILLETS—AND PREPARATION	37
IX. THE BATTLE OF THE SOMME	43
X. BETHUNE—AND RECUPERATION	49
XI. THE RETURN TO THE SOMME	54
XII. BONNEVILLE—AND REST	61
XIII. BEAUMONT HAMEL	64
XIV. THE GERMAN RETREAT	69
XV. NIEUPORT	77
XVI. THE YPRES SALIENT	87
EMBARKATION ROLL	94
ROLL OF OFFICERS, N.C.O.'s AND MEN AT THIEPVAL, 1ST JULY, 1916	150
ROLL OF OFFICERS WHO ALSO SERVED WITH THE 16TH BATTALION .	170
ROLL OF HONOUR	173
THE 32ND DIVISION, 1915, 1916, 1918	180
HONOURS AND AWARDS	182

	PAGE
APPENDICES—	
I. THE FIRST GUARD, 1914	185
II. THE COMPOSITE BATTALION	187
III. "THE GROWLER"	189
IV. BATTALION SPORTS	194
V. SIR DOUGLAS HAIG'S SECOND DESPATCH	197
VI. SIR DOUGLAS HAIG'S FOURTH DESPATCH	205
VII. TABLE OF EVENTS	212
VIII. 16TH NORTHUMBERLAND FUSILIERS COMRADES' LEAGUE	219
IX. THE WORK OF THE MILITARY COMMITTEE	222
X. WAR OFFICE TRIBUTE	227
AFTERWORD. BY LIEUT.-COL. W. H. RITSON, C.M.G., V.D.	229
BIBLIOGRAPHY	231
INDEX	233

ILLUSTRATIONS

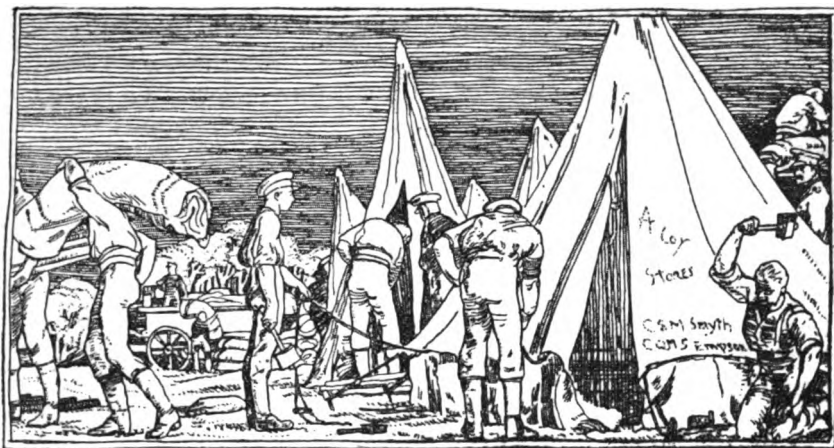
OFFICERS OF THE BATTALION, ALNWICK, APRIL, 1915	<i>Frontispiece</i>
<i>From a photograph by JAS. BACON & SONS, Newcastle-upon-Tyne.</i>	
*DEDICATION	ix.
<i>Drawn by LIEUT. A. K. LAWRENCE (19th Batt.)</i>	
LIEUT.-COL. W. H. RITSON, C.M.G., V.D.	6
<i>From a photograph by SARONY & Co., Harrogate.</i>	
"WAR DANCE OF COMMERCIALS," OCTOBER, 1914	14
<i>By permission of the proprietors of Illustrated Chronicle.</i>	
"FREQUENTLY, SIR!"	14
<i>From a drawing by C. WADE (16th Batt.)</i>	
BRIGADIER-GENERAL C. YATMAN, C.M.G., D.S.O.	19
<i>From a photograph by G. C. BERESFORD, Brompton Road, S.W.</i>	
CAMP, CODFORD ST MARY	22
<i>From a photograph supplied by J. PENMAN.</i>	
FRENCH VILLAGE SCENE	22
<i>From a drawing by C. WADE.</i>	
"LONDON BRIDGE," CHRISTMAS, 1915	30
96TH INFANTRY BRIGADE STAFF, JULY, 1916	30
AUTHUILLE SECTOR, JUNE, 1916	38
<i>From a photograph by MAJOR L. B. PROCTOR, M.C.</i>	
*LA BOISSELLE: SHOWING ALBERT-BAPAUME ROAD	38
<i>From a photograph, taken in 1919, by LIEUT. WEBB, M.C. (18th Batt.)</i>	
NO MAN'S LAND, THIEPVAL, JUNE, 1916	46
<i>From a photograph by MAJOR L. B. PROCTOR, M.C.</i>	
CHURCH PARADE, BETHUNE, 6TH AUGUST, 1916	52
<i>From a photograph by CAPTAIN W. T. RICHARDSON.</i>	
BETHUNE, 1919	52
<i>From a photograph by ALFRED BREWIS.</i>	
LIEUT.-COL. A. W. LITTLE	60
<i>From a photograph by JAS. BACON & SONS, Newcastle-upon-Tyne.</i>	
*"THE FUSILIER"	68
<i>From a drawing by LIEUT. A. K. LAWRENCE (19th Batt.)</i>	

* Blocks by courtesy of Messrs Wm. Brendon & Son, Plymouth.

	TO PAGE PAGE
LIEUT.-COL. A. J. SCULLY, M.C.	71
<i>From a photograph by J. WESTON & SONS, Eastbourne.</i>	
MATIGNY	76
<i>From a photograph by CAPTAIN W. T. RICHARDSON.</i>	
THE ESTAMINET	76
<i>From a drawing by C. WADE.</i>	
NIEUPORT SECTOR	82
<i>By permission of the AIR MINISTRY.</i>	
DIXMUDE	88
<i>From a photograph, taken in 1919, by ALFRED BREWIS.</i>	
EGYPT HOUSE	88
<i>From a photograph, taken after Armistice, by CAPTAIN C. A. F. STEWART (Manchester).</i>	
† "OUR COLONEL"	191
<i>From The Growler.</i>	
RUGBY TEAM	195
<i>By permission of the proprietors of Illustrated Chronicle.</i>	
THE CRICKET TEAM, 1915	195
<i>From a photograph by MAJOR L. B. PROCTOR, M.C.</i>	
SUMMARY OF THE HISTORY	221
<i>From a drawing by C. WADE (16th Batt.)</i>	
† Block by courtesy of Messrs Large & Sons, Ltd., Newcastle-upon-Tyne, and Mrs Mackey.	

MAPS

MAP I. BATTLE OF THE SOMME, 1ST JULY, 1916	<i>At end of volume</i>
MAP II. YPRES SALIENT, FEBRUARY, 1918	,,
MAP III. GENERAL MAP	,,
<i>Drawn by CAPTAIN C. H. COOKE, M.C.</i>	



HISTORICAL RECORDS

OF THE SIXTEENTH (SERVICE) BATTALION

NORTHUMBERLAND FUSILIERS

CHAPTER I

THE RAISING OF THE BATTALION

THE History of the 16th Battalion Northumberland Fusiliers may be said to begin from the first days of the Great War. Actually, the battalion was not officially recognised by the War Office until 8th September, 1914; but the unit was in being before this date.

Newcastle certainly did not lag. On 6th August, 1914, two days after Britain made her momentous decision to enter the war, a small meeting of business men was held in Milburn House to consider the crisis and to decide how best to organise to meet the emergency. There were present Colonel W. H. Ritson, V.D., Major Robert Temperley, T.D., Major J. Leadbitter Knott, Messrs W. J. Noble, J.P., and O. Cookson. Grave events had arisen with calamitous swiftness; to plan, in these circumstances, was a difficult task. Yet these gentlemen were the means of forming the Citizens' Training League; and from that League sprang the many battalions which so nobly upheld the traditions of Tyneside. The nucleus was well planned. With Colonel W. H. Ritson, V.D., as Commandant, and Messrs R. H. Newton and A. A. Johnson as Honorary Secretaries the League began to train at the Royal Grammar School.

This system, useful as it was, did not adequately fulfil the patriotic desires of the Quaysiders. On 2nd September, 1914, at a meeting of the Council of the Newcastle and Gateshead Chamber of Commerce, Mr George Renwick, M.P., referring to the grave national situation, proposed that the Chamber should ask the Lord Mayor to raise a battalion for the Northumberland Fusiliers from among the citizens of Newcastle. Major Robert Temperley suggested that the Chamber could assist most usefully by appealing direct to those classes of young men with which it was most in touch. Further, he suggested that application should be made at once for authority to raise, organise and equip a battalion of infantry from amongst the younger commercial men on the Quayside and "up-street." Thus comrades would be enabled to serve side by side. The desirability of this basis of recruiting had been well proved by the raising of the Quayside Company for the 3rd Volunteer Battalion (now 6th T.F. Battalion) Northumberland Fusiliers during the South African War. Mr Renwick cordially accepted the suggestion and, on his proposal, the Council decided that a telegram be sent at once to the War Office putting forward the offer, and asking for authority to begin recruiting. The Military Committee was appointed to carry out the undertaking on behalf of the Chamber of Commerce.

Some days elapsed, but no War Office authority was received. The news, however, was abroad, and nothing could restrain the patriotic enthusiasm of the young commercial men, and over 400 were provisionally enrolled by Mr Robert Stephenson. The Army for them, and a quick passage to France! On 7th September, a full company of 250 accepted enlistment in the 9th (Service) Battalion Northumberland Fusiliers and left Newcastle to join that unit, then training at Wool, in Dorsetshire. The History of this splendid Company forms a companion volume of this series.

The very next day (8th September, 1914) the War Office acceptance of the offer of the Chamber of Commerce was received, and recruiting at once began for the first battalion to be raised by the Chamber. This battalion, afterwards numbered the 16th (Service) Battalion Northumberland Fusiliers, was completed by 16th September.

The 16th Battalion can therefore claim to be the first unit of the New Army to be raised by civilian effort in the North of England. The rate at which recruits were obtained is a splendid tribute, not only to the patriotism of Tyneside, but also to the efficiency of the machinery set up by the Chamber of Commerce.

The remarkable success which attended the first battalion inspired the idea of further units, and very soon the Tyneside district contributed two more "Commercials," a North Eastern Railway Battalion, and the Tyneside Scottish and Irish Brigades. Later, it was a sincere regret that there was not a complete "Commercial" Brigade to take the field.

To the 16th Battalion, then, is the honour of leading the way. Other, and later, units drew largely from the ranks of the 16th Battalion when appointing their first officers. When the 18th and 19th Battalions were assembling daily on their respective parade grounds in "civvy" suits and bowler hats, it was the duty of the 16th Battalion to send an officer each day to act as Adjutant to these younger units. Resplendent in tunic, Sam Browne and "slacks" (the breeches took longer to make!) the young officer could survey "these civilians." Such a feeling of superiority was momentary only: the young officer soon saw that "these civilians" were imbued with the same martial spirit and determination that animated him. In after years when he heard of the deeds of the 18th and 19th he was proud indeed to have been, even for one day, Acting Adjutant (without pay) of one of these fine units of a fine Regiment.

Such was the genesis of the "First Commercials," and proud indeed was Lieutenant-Colonel W. H. Ritson, V.D., to be in command of such a promising battalion. The promise was exceeded by the achieved results.

CHAPTER II

EARLY TRAINING AT NEWCASTLE

THE rush to the Colours was phenomenal. Men arrived faster than they could be attested. Those through the ordeal joked about it, and continued to make attestation a theme for wit. The rush continued, and the recruits were drilled on the spacious grounds of the Royal Grammar School. Any man with previous military training was given a squad of from thirty to sixty men. The recruits revelled in the work; hours and hours of "Form Fours," "About Turn," and the like did not cause their zeal to wane. Cheerfulness characterised the early days, a typical British blending of levity and get-on-with-the-job determination; and this cheerfulness marked the battalion throughout its career. Comrades all, the very spirit of pal-dom pervaded everyone.

Platoons were formed, and Companies began to shape. To accommodate Headquarters, a commodious wooden hut was rapidly erected at the top of the field. Here the stream of recruits was quickly handled by Colonel Ritson and his staff. No finer parade ground could have been obtained than that at the Royal Grammar School. Spacious, yes: and comparatively private. No one was over keen to let a curious public—things military were still objects of curiosity in those early days—see his first endeavours to "jump to it." Feet were not so nimble as they might have been; and, anyway, forming fours was not, at first, so simple as it looked. Instructors, too, and aspiring N.C.O.'s were not so sure of their commands. Was it not a cause for gratitude for extensive grounds when your squad was marching headlong into another squad and you had forgotten the correct command to stay their disastrous course? Praise be to the Grammar School grounds for their size, and even for their privacy in those early days of learning.

Mention of these early days at the Grammar School would not be complete without reference to the self-sacrificing efforts of Major J. Talbot, D.L. His lectures on tactical operations, his practical demonstrations of tactics, map-reading, and open warfare were of incalculable value to many a young officer subsequently.

Many were the expressions of regret when it was learnt that he was not to accompany the battalion abroad, but to find fresh spheres of labour in another part of the country.

Thanks must also be given to the Grammar School O.T.C., whose senior N.C.O.'s did much in explaining the mysteries of "Form Fours" and "About Turn." These youthful experts took squads, and did their bit at the very outset. Many of them, in later years, gave their lives in the service of their country.

Squad drill was the order of the day, and for every day. From 9 a.m.—12.30; and from 2 p.m.—4.30 squad drill, squad drill, squad drill, relieved slightly by physical jerks. Looking back on it now, it appears marvellous that it was possible. Only the infinite keenness of all ranks justified the programme. The quest for N.C.O.'s began. Any man with previous military training got his chance. Some failed through lack of "snap"; they lacked the "ginger" which proclaims the autocrat of the barrack square. Others had the voice and necessary "ginger"; but knew not the "book of words," alias "Manual of Infantry Training." One big recruit, with his bowler tilted well back on his head, spoke to his platoon commander after a trial of some "veterans."

"Look here, sir, I'm not saying anything against these chaps who have just had a try with the platoon, but, all the same, I could do better myself."

Next day he got his chance, and proved that his confidence was justified. Before the end of the week he was appointed a Lance-Corporal. He deserved his promotion.

[With officers the case was somewhat different. The task was to select the best from a host of applicants. The lure of the Sam Browne was powerful! A special "Applicants for Commissions" squad was formed. Each afternoon, after the battalion had assembled and the roll was called, the command was heard, "Applicants for Commissions fall out on the right." To the casual observer it appeared as though half the battalion aspired to commissioned glory. But it was no sinecure in the Applicants' Squad. Sergeant-Major A. S. O'Brien proceeded to "put them through it," and demonstrated the value of marching 120 to the minute. To many it seemed like 520!

Squad drill continued; but, after a while, short route marches relieved the monotony. Such marches gave opportunity for vocal efforts; the solitary kettledrum was not sufficiently exciting or inspiring. Soldiers on the march, even if they were still in "civvies," were an incident then: the illustrated papers published photographs of "Commercials on the March." The off-shouted

command " Watch your step " was a bad second to the desire to watch the pavement. You never knew your luck in that direction.

Only the officers were in uniform; the " other ranks " wore a piece of red cord round the right shoulder, an honourable badge to signify that the wearer had answered the call of his country. The Military Committee was only too anxious to get the battalion into khaki as soon as possible, but found that the supply of khaki material would not allow of this. It was possible, however, to obtain a uniform of a dull, bluish-grey colour and the order was placed with Messrs Bainbridge & Co.

No one liked the grey uniform. The material was very serviceable and stood much hard wear. But it seemed as though a substitute for khaki meant a relegation to a backwater of military activity. The war would soon be over—and here was the battalion not in khaki. Little did we dream then of what " the duration " was actually to be. Many khaki uniforms were worn out in the dread interval. But the grey it had to be; and every man got a stock size which fitted as it hung. Wonderful sights presented themselves to mockery: only the efforts of their own tailors could bring some of the wearers almost back to their well-garbed selves. Almost, but not quite; for many could never be reconciled to the shortness of the jackets. They felt positively indecent.

Generally, in those first months, the weather was very good, and training steadily progressed. On wet days the Newcastle Hippodrome, kindly lent by Mr W. H. Bebb, was at the disposal of the battalion. Nominally, the men were paraded there to hear lectures on military topics; actually, the event developed into a long, jolly smoking concert. To the nervous young officers, fretfully swotting up notes on " Care of the feet," " Care of Arms," " Discipline " and kindred topics we offer apologies; we have forgotten their names and their lectures. We have not, however, forgotten the singing of George Hodgson, Jimmy Southern, Arthur Strike, and Billie Viner. These and other artistes made the time pass pleasantly: we did not mind the rain a bit. Later the battalion showed its appreciation of the kindness of Mr Bebb by presenting him with a hall clock. This gift was handed over at a performance to which Mr Bebb invited the battalion.

The first official appearance of the battalion in the city was on 15th September on the occasion of the inspection, by the Lord Mayor, of the 6th (City) Battalion Northumberland Fusiliers. As the 16th Battalion was commanded by a former commanding officer of the 6th—Colonel Ritson—it was in every way appropriate that the 16th should be associated with the 6th in a ceremony which gave the



Photo by:

LIEUT.-COL. W. H. RITSON, C.M.G., V.D.

[*Sarony & Co.*

Digitized by Google

citizens of Newcastle an opportunity of seeing two battalions which in every sense of the word were representative of the city. The inspection was held in front of the Town Hall and was an inspiring spectacle. Although we had not the advantage of uniforms, we may modestly claim that signs of military training were much in evidence. Even after a term of soldiering which could be measured only in days, men began to have that corporate sense of belonging to a battalion, and of being proud to belong to that battalion.

The second official appearance of the battalion was on Sunday, 4th October, 1914, when a Church Parade was held at St Nicholas' Cathedral. This was a glorious service, made memorable by the stirring hymn "St George of Old the Dragon Slew," the regimental hymn of the "Fighting Fifth." These two ceremonial parades were a great stimulus. The "First Commercial" had developed an individuality; the mass of men had become a living unit.

There came the desire to do more. Constant drill had had its effect: daily the news from "Over there" rekindled the martial ardour: in most breasts there was one longing—to be up and doing something. Newspapers continued to say that the war would be soon over; and it appeared likely that the battalion would not see service overseas. All units had the same depressing feeling that the laborious days of squad-drill would be their total of military service. Daily, all ranks hoped for something to turn up, something with a war-like flavour. At last it came, one bright morning in mid-November. Something had turned up: there was a sudden mysterious call for men with any previous experience of musketry. Imagination took rein; and anyone with even a nodding acquaintance with a man who once saw a gun licence believed himself to possess the necessary qualifications. So, too, the expert who had once caused the extinction of a celluloid ball at the "Hoppings" adopted the airs of a Bisley crack.

The census of "riflemen" totalled nearly 400. They were sent home after being told to parade in a field on the North Road during the afternoon; they must be ready for any emergency. Facts being scarce, rumour triumphed. Of course, at least 50,000 Germans were at that moment afloat in the North Sea in barges, or in any old tubs. In fact, there were probably 150,000 Germans. Where would they land? Tynemouth? Blyth? Visions of a stirring rumpus in the Spanish City—but the solid fact remained that the selected marksmen found in the field on the North Road that other units had also sent their quota! The whole of the proud selected were formed into the Composite Battalion, whose harrowing story is told in Appendix II. Here nothing remains to be

8 16th (Service) Battalion Northumberland Fusiliers

added but that the Composite Battalion “ was born in enthusiasm, lived in suspicion, and died in disgust.”

So far, the 16th Battalion had not had the advantage of the corporate life which can only be provided by barrack or camp life. Men went back home each night; and the daily dispersal tended to hinder progress. With the utmost pleasure was the news received that a camp was being prepared for the battalion at Alnwick, in the park of the Duke of Northumberland.

CHAPTER III

ALNWICK

THE site chosen for the hutted camp at Alnwick was well-nigh ideal. It was to have been ready for the battalion early in November, but delays occurred, and it was a full month later before we received the long-expected orders to proceed to the new quarters. On 8th December, 1914, the battalion (less the men detached with the Composite Battalion) entrained for Alnwick. The weather was perfect—a happy augury.

On arrival at Alnwick, we were welcomed by the band of the 4th Northumberland Fusiliers, whose dépôt is there, and they played us down the hill to the Lion Bridge and up the hill to the camp. Our own band, under the leadership of the ever genial Sergeant-Drummer Cronin, also performed well. Thanks to the generosity of Mrs George Renwick (now Lady Renwick) the band possessed a fine set of drums, fifes and bugles. We longed for a full military band, but, realising that "there was a war on," we reconciled ourselves to the fifes and bugles. In time, indeed, all became very familiar with every semiquaver of "The Death of Nelson." There is no truth, however, in the allegation that the Sergeant-Drummer received a small commission every time the band played that tune. Nor was he trying to create a new record in repetition.

All ranks quickly settled into the huts and were impressed by their roominess and the excellence of the various sanitary, bathing, cooking and messing arrangements. Each hut held a platoon (60 men), thus making the quarters of a Company very compact. This arrangement tended to foster a healthy spirit of emulation. One cubicle per hut accommodated two sergeants. On either side of the large kitchen was a spacious mess-room, each mess capable of holding half of the battalion. These fine rooms proved very useful for lectures and for concerts. Consistent with the ample kitchen and messing arrangements, the rations too were on a very generous scale.

The last building to be completed was the bath-house: when it was in full swing the hot and cold showers were much appreciated. From all points of view the camp at Alnwick reached a very high standard of comfort and convenience. To the south, Alnwick Castle dominated the scene. The broad expanse of pasture, with the beautiful River Aln in the foreground, made the prospect altogether delightful.

The change worked wonders. Regular hours, strenuous exercise, good rations and invigorating air soon took effect. Most men put on weight, and the health of the battalion was very good. Six days after the arrival of the first half of the battalion, the second half, freed by the dispersal of the Tyneside Composite Battalion, rejoined. It was gratifying to have the whole unit together again; it was even more gratifying for the men to be back. For three weary weeks they had suffered all the trials of that modern Black Hole of Calcutta—Clarence Street Schools. They hailed, with infinite joy, the comforts of the Alnwick Camp.

The battalion was brigaded with the 18th and 19th Battalions Northumberland Fusiliers, and the 18th (County) Battalion Durham Light Infantry. The Brigade was numbered 122, and was under the command of Brigadier-General J. Gunning Hunter, C.B., who visited the battalion on Christmas Eve. His evident pleasure was recorded in the 122nd Brigade Orders of 30th December, 1914:

“The Brigadier-General has been much pleased with the general turn-out of the Battalions of his Brigade that he has inspected.

“The men are clean, smart and keen and are fine soldiers. The outfit, equipment and housing arrangements reflect the very highest credit on those to whom they have been entrusted. The physique and health of the men in general are excellent. The march discipline and the bands are good.

“The 16th and 18th Northumberland Fusiliers have put in a great deal of hard work in physical and close order drill and have reached a stage at which adaption should now commence.”

The Brigade Staff came over from Morpeth only occasionally. Their advent usually caused an ill-at-ease feeling: for were we not novices in the sight of experts? Always, however, their visits brought kindly help; and no one was more welcome than the Brigade-Major, Captain G. W. Dyer (Royal West Surrey Regiment). He had been through it in France, and his lectures on the actual events of the war were illuminating and very popular.

Lucky indeed were those who, later on, went through the special course at Morpeth under Captain Dyer.

Christmas leave was granted on a fairly liberal scale. Those who were not fortunate enough to get a leave pass had a very pleasant time in camp, where special fare was provided. Food restrictions had not yet made life a worry! Unfortunately, the festive season was marred for all by a sad accident, resulting in the death of one of the most promising officers in the battalion. Lieutenant K. Saunders received fatal injuries while motor-cycling near Alnwick on New Year's Eve. Those who knew Kenneth Saunders can appreciate to the full the great loss sustained by the battalion. He was popular amongst all ranks. With full military honours he was interred in St Andrew's Cemetery, Newcastle, the firing party being detailed from his platoon.

In the new year the long-expected khaki uniforms arrived, the familiar blue-grey being relegated to "second-best" wear. The change into real uniform was very welcome.

Gradually the programme of training was stiffened, and long route marches, together with tactical schemes, became prominent. Tactical schemes were very amusing. At first, imaginations did not quite rise to the narrative: one had to visualise the hostile enemy marching, say, from Berwick to storm the Town Hall of Gateshead. If the eager defending force did not realise where the hostile troops had reached, there would be an amazing and amusing medley (only in the imagination of those who had pictured the various hypothetical movements!). For instance, in the famous Battle of Warkworth, "A" Company marched in column of route up the main street, which, according to the narrative, was swept by a number of machine guns posted on the top of the hill! Annihilation (hypothetic) was often a twice hourly occurrence. The nine lives of a cat were negligible to the number possessed by each man on a tactical scheme. Later, the sheer joy of the post-mortem discussion made the errors worth while. Somehow the machine gunners *always* caught the advancing troops in enfilade: they recounted each murderous assault with unholy glee and pride!

Occasionally the Brigade Staff accompanied the battalion on a field day. Their presence was not always a source of comfort—to judge from the nervous excitement of some of the officers.

Alnwick Camp was admirably adapted for the furtherance of social gatherings. Each week a dance was held, and the battalion orchestra, under Private Penman, helped largely in the success of the joyful times. There was no dearth of musical talent; the

12 16th (Service) Battalion Northumberland Fusiliers

efforts of singers, instrumentalists, and elocutionists were much appreciated. The many concerts have left happy memories; the topical hits are still remembered.

Some were tired of the long stay at Alnwick; and, on the authority of *The Growler*, there were 5,359,906,999 blades of grass in the pastures. This figure was never disputed! Even the display of a senior officer only temporarily relieved the situation. He was supposed to be in charge of the parade; but unfortunately his horse took charge of him and careered wildly towards the river. Also, the arrival in camp of the Tyneside Scottish created another diversion. Yet the desire to be on active service made any delay seem irksome.

CHAPTER IV

CRAMLINGTON

THE stay at Alnwick was abruptly ended by an order to move by special train to Cramlington. Only a few hours notice was given, and it was understood that active service might be experienced in repelling a landing on the north-east coast. All men surplus to war establishment were left behind, but the recently arrived ammunition was to be served out. This caused great excitement—with one misgiving. Was it to be another Clarence Street affair?

The pipes and drums sounded, and the troops marched eagerly to Alnwick Station to the accompaniment of the enthusiastic cheers of the good townspeople. They had been the soul of kindness during all our stay, and we were truly sorry to bid them farewell. Their fervent cries of "God-speed," "Good luck" lingered with the troops.

The move to Cramlington was accomplished in three instalments. The first consisted of Headquarters, "A" and "B" Companies, very smart and soldierly; the second, "C" and "D" Companies, less smart and soldierly as they were loaded up with extra rifles, boxes of ammunition, picks, shovels and other impedimenta: the third, the clearing-up party. The first night at Cramlington was spent in the open. Of course the rain fell to add to the joys of "active service." One or two men even went so far as to say that this was worse than Clarence Street: they were promptly subdued. Tents were pitched early next day, and, after a few false starts, were deemed satisfactory by those whose word was law. The alignment was all right: the rows were properly dressed; to military precision and exactitude, the tents conformed. It was as neat a camp as one could see—until the rain fell. Those unfortunates whose tent lay in the wide furrows found themselves proposing, in pungent language, various amendments. There is some imperfection in military precision when you wake up to find your blankets waterlogged.

The reason for the sudden eviction from Alnwick was somewhat obscure, but it is believed that important strategic considerations compelled it. When the Territorials on Coast Defence had gone overseas, someone had overlooked the fact that this door to England had been left open. Realisation had come suddenly, and the 122nd Brigade was despatched to fill the gap. It was fortunate that the battalion was not called upon to live at its battle posts. Trenches there were, but of the most elementary type. Their value is still a matter of conjecture.

To Cramlington came a batch of subalterns from the Oxford University O.T.C. One brought his moustache with him, a fearsome culture that, as a result of unremitting care, had produced ends like opposing twin daggers. He asserted that such waxed ends were *de rigueur* in the Household Cavalry: but this contention failed to impress his audience. A quick snip, and one waxed end tried to pierce the floor. It was unanimously agreed that the shorn side looked ever so much prettier than the other. Solemnly the operator snipped again, and the second dagger joined its twin on the floor.

The Transport Officer, aided and abetted by his "Man Friday," the Transport Sergeant, organised a Riding School. Learning to ride was one of the minor horrors of army life. Steeds varied; so did the riders. Usually the Transport Officer had a stock of vivid remarks, which hurt; the saddle hurt too; so did the ground when it rose up to meet the novice. To be told not to cuddle the horse in public was bad enough: it was adding insult to injury to be rudely told that no order to dismount had been given. One day the Colonel asked one of the learners how he was getting on; "Frequently, sir," was the reply. Truly it was a life of ups and downs, the downs winning on the score of speed!

At Cramlington the battalion celebrated its first St George's Day. The red and white roses, kindly provided by the Chamber of Commerce, added a gay touch to the parade. The correct posing of the roses in the caps was explained; and the cheery sight caused much wonderment in the mining villages through which the battalion marched.

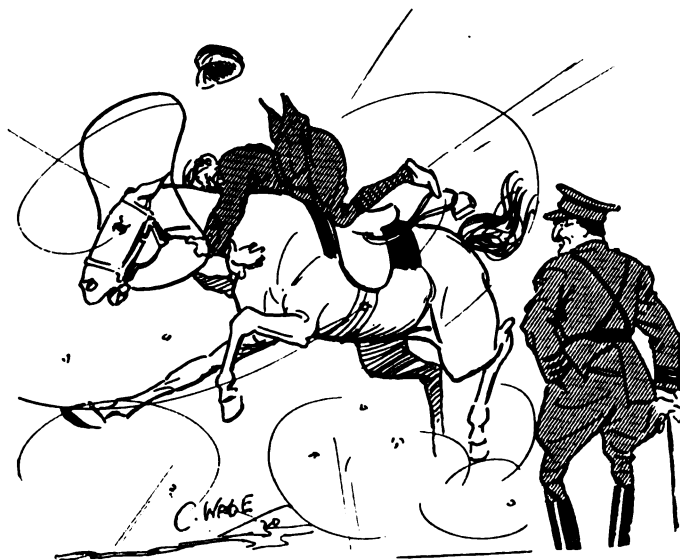
Ceremonial parades were frequent, and, in the field alongside the Camp, General Hunter with his Brigade-Major and Staff Captain put the Brigade through it. In the morning sunlight the glittering bayonets created a sense of power: and the whole Brigade derived great benefit from the intensive training. There was a reason for the polishing-up process, for on 18th May appeared the following Brigade Order:



Photo by]

" WAR DANCE OF COMMERCIALS "
October, 1914.

[" Illustrated Chronicle."]



Drawn by]

" FREQUENTLY, SIR ! "

[C. Wade, 16th Bn.

"At the conclusion of his inspection of the Brigade to-day, the General Officer Commanding-in-Chief, Northern Command, desired the Brigadier-General Commanding to convey to all ranks in the Brigade his entire satisfaction with what he had seen, and his appreciation of the hard work of all ranks which has been instrumental in bringing the units of the Brigade to their present state of efficiency. The Brigadier-General Commanding has much pleasure in publishing this message, and he considers that all ranks of the Brigade have combined to earn the praise of the G.O.C.-in-C."

This inspection by Lieutenant-General Lawson was a preliminary to the mass parade of troops on 20th May before His Majesty the King and Field-Marshal Lord Kitchener on the Town Moor, Newcastle-upon-Tyne. The long march in the heat of the morning, the long wait on parade, the strain of the march-past were amply compensated by the magnificent sight. The Scottish Horse marched past first—a gay regiment—and the waiting infantry watched with keen pleasure. Later the double columns swung past the saluting base in fine style, and thence to camp. A thirsty march, too, it was. Cramlington seemed a long way off.

Subsequently the following appeared in Orders:

"After the march-past by the Brigade yesterday, His Majesty the King expressed to the Brigadier-General Commanding his complete satisfaction with the appearance and turn-out of the Brigade, and the manner in which the march-past was carried out.

"Field-Marshal Lord Kitchener especially complimented the Brigadier on the steadiness of the men, and said that the Brigade carried out its movements with the precision of Foot Guards.

"The Brigadier-General has very much pleasure in conveying these messages to the Brigade, and he thanks all ranks for the hard work which has earned this high praise."

On the 26th May the battalion again marched to Newcastle to the Chamber of Commerce, where they were addressed by members of the Chamber, and were told how proud Newcastle was of them. Later in the day, at the Hippodrome, the Chamber of Commerce lavishly entertained the battalion. Refreshments and comfort were much appreciated.

It has often been regretted that the 122nd Infantry Brigade could not have gone overseas as a formation, but it was not to be.

16 16th (Service) Battalion Northumberland Fusiliers

Almost immediately after the inspection by His Majesty, the 18th (S.) Battalion Durham Light Infantry left the Brigade, and the three Commercial Battalions were soon to be sent to join Divisions concentrating at various points.¹ The 16th Battalion moved to Catterick Bridge, Yorkshire, on 23rd June, where it became part of the 96th Brigade, 32nd Division of the Fourth New Army.

The stay at Cramlington had been very enjoyable. Vaccination had added another minor horror during the last month, but most men soon recovered from the after effects. Recruiting marches had been organised to fill up the Dépôt Companies. These Companies were left behind when the battalion moved, the officers in charge being: Major T. P. A. Rose, Captains J. H. Rose, J. de O. S. Paynter, O. V. Potts, Lieutenant J. H. Adams, Second-Lieutenants R. S. Watson, R. J. Berry, B. Collier, R. W. M. Davies, A. M. Fenn, and O. Thomas.

¹ 16th Battalion to 82nd Division.

18th Battalion to 84th Division.

19th Battalion to 85th Division.

CHAPTER V

CATTERICK BRIDGE AND CODFORD ST MARY

THE camp at Catterick Bridge was well situated, and the men were comfortable and contented. Unfortunately, the water supply was insufficient to enable the baths to be used, but bathing parades in the River Swale were almost a daily occurrence.

The 96th Infantry Brigade was under the command of Brigadier-General Thuillier, with Captain R. S. Popham, D.S.O., as Brigade-Major. Battalions in the Brigade were, 16th (S.) Battalion Northumberland Fusiliers, and the 15th, 16th and 19th Battalions Lancashire Fusiliers. The 17th Battalion Northumberland Fusiliers (North-Eastern Railway) was the Pioneer Battalion of the Division and was also camped at Catterick. The Brigadier-General, after Church Parade on 27th June, told the battalion that he had heard, at York, very favourable reports of the "Commercials." He was pleased to know that the 16th was keen on sport; for a good sporting battalion was always a good fighting unit. This little complimentary oration over, the Brigadier-General presented the prizes won at Alnwick and Cramlington.

During the first night at Catterick one of the men, whose zeal considerably outpointed his knowledge of geography, drew the attention of an officer to a "mysterious light out at sea." He had visions of the German High Seas Fleet about to entertain the camp with another tip-and-run bombardment.

Brigade operations on an ambitious scale were frequently undertaken. On these occasions it was not always possible to be certain of the exact position. Two officers, keenly searching the map, differed in their estimate of the location.

"We are at the first o of Downholme," said one.

"Not at all," argued the other, "we are a quarter of an inch north of the C in Coldstorms."

"My opinion, Bill," said a man standing near, "is that we are at the Y of — well lost!" His opinion was correct.

These operations demanded good scouts. Those of the

16th Battalion were organised and trained by Second-Lieutenant Avery (known as "Birdcage") whose hobby had been scouting. In a short while this most energetic and capable officer trained a highly efficient squad. On Divisional Manœuvres, his troop of performers ambushed the enemy's scouts, and, to prove that the captures were made, they annexed the bolts of the rifles of their prisoners. Next morning a half-limber was sent round to the various Battalion Headquarters to restore the bolts to their rightful owners. However conclusive such evidence was, the practice was frowned on by Divisional Headquarters and the band of pirates had to devise other means of proving their efficiency. The splendid training given by Avery proved its value in France. The scouts of the 16th were famous in the Division; so much so that the majority of the Divisional and Brigade observers were subsequently furnished by the battalion.

Two days a week, and occasionally at night, the battalion paraded for Divisional Training under Major-General Rycroft. This officer, and General Sir Bruce Hamilton, commanding the Fourth Army, both visited the camp, and expressed their satisfaction with the smart appearance of the men and the condition of the camp.

We were never quite happy at Catterick. On 27th July the battalion was ordered to proceed to Monkseaton to fire the Musketry Course. Great was the joy thereat. Monkseaton—and August Bank Holiday! Imagination can easily complete the picture. If, in the following brief description, there appears to be a curious vagueness, the reason has just been stated.

Two companies fired in the morning, and two in the afternoon. It was quite all right in the morning; but there seemed to be something amiss with the afternoon parade states. The Musketry Officer, a most conscientious individual, was in the butts. He attempted once or twice to transfer his attentions to the firing point, but was always waylaid by wily company officers, and kept away. The practice went on merrily: in such wise did the company fire its course,

Major F. J. Cheverton, Second-in-Command of the 16th, was promoted to command the 18th and 19th Battalions Durham Light Infantry, Depot Companies, and left the battalion on 28th July. His departure was a great loss to the battalion. At about this time so many officers were away on instructional courses that the Depot was called upon to supply officers for temporary duty.

Promotions appeared at intervals, and naturally the *Gazette* was eagerly scanned to see who had drawn winning numbers. One



Photo by

BRIGADIER-GENERAL C. YATMAN, C.M.G., D.S.O.
Commanded 96th Inf. Brigade.

[G. C. Beresford.]

officer was pensively gazing into the fire when another officer came in.

"I say, old man, you're in the *Gazette* this morning."

"Er—what? Stubbs'?" inquired the pensive one, coming back to earth from his day dream.

As usual, the sporting side had received its full share of attention. Cricket was popular, and inter-company matches varied the old Officers versus Sergeants athletic feud. Runners, too, kept up the traditions; and, at Darlington, on the 24th July, several members succeeded in capturing prizes.

Musketry was completed at Monkseaton after a very interesting and strenuous ten days. There was no return to Catterick, for orders were received for the battalion to proceed to Salisbury Plain. We occupied hutments at Codford St Mary, Wiltshire, on the south-western edge of the Plain. The camp was pleasantly situated in the valley of the Wylde, about sixteen miles west of Salisbury. The concentration of the whole of the 82nd Division on this excellent manœuvre area allowed the finishing touches to be added to the training. The men were in the best of spirits; and quite a number, in their spare time, assisted the local farmers.

Further musketry courses were carried out on the miniature range; and each company in turn was instructed in the handling of bombs and grenades. Unfortunately, bombing practice is never a safe occupation; and a regrettable accident occurred to Sergeant Darley. He held on to the grenade just too long, and lost his right hand.

Towards the end of August several officers came to the Brigade from France, and the training was specialised along the lines of situations which had occurred on active service. The chief amongst these new arrivals was our new Brigade Commander, Brigadier-General O. Yatman, C.M.G., D.S.O., a Fifth Fusilier himself. Tactical schemes were repeated, until the tactical lesson was thoroughly learnt: minor details, such as "dinner hour," were as nothing. The whole Division went out for three days: this gave practice in the arranging of billets, bivouacs and the protection thereof. For two nights our Brigade took over a line of trenches; the lesson there was that a trench is never finished. All the irritating restrictions were enforced: no movement except under cover; no field kitchens or rations allowed up before dark; communication by telephone; and the trenches improved or dug during the hours of darkness. All this was done in good part after the airing of the soldiers' grouse: "It's a damned nuisance, but I suppose the blighter knows his job." The blighter *did*!

Later, Lewis guns were issued and the training of special squads began. Under Major Leake the musketry practices went on continuously. In the midst of all this warlike activity the battalion flag, presented by the Chamber of Commerce, arrived and was hoisted with due honour in the presence of the whole battalion.

September 8th, the first anniversary of the formation of the battalion, was a day of celebration. In the morning Brigadier-General Yatman, attended by his staff, inspected the battalion, and predicted a short and merry campaign in France, with everybody home again within twelve months. What a prophecy! The afternoon was devoted to sports. The tit-bit of the programme was a football match between the oldest officers and the oldest sergeants. Ten minutes each way proved quite ample to test the stamina of the veterans, the officers being winners by two goals to nil.

In the evening the Divisional Commander, the Brigadier, and the other Olympians from the various Headquarters honoured us with their presence at dinner. As usual, the little glee party gave their renderings of those topical songs, "If I were" and "Old King Cole."

Divisional manœuvres were valuable, but sleeping out in the open on Salisbury Plain in October and November has defects as a hobby. The "No Parade" call at the conclusion of the strenuous days was a welcome sound. The battalions, frequently in charge of subalterns, returned joyfully to camp while their grave and thoughtful senior officers foregathered at an appointed spot to hold a post-mortem discussion. Generals had their say: their remarks, pithy or voluble, had a pungency all their own. They were the oracles of the type of "What I have said I have said." The learned "G" Staff expanded themes, and elucidated difficulties. Thank heaven, *they* could occasionally be cross-questioned, and even drawn into an argument. Whether in the vicinity of Oram's Grave or the Great Ridge Wood, the pow-wow concluded the proceedings.

The following anecdote is taken from *The Growler*. A furious battle is in progress. Blank ammunition is being expended with reckless prodigality, and the air is full of excitement and bad language.

N.C.O. (to O.C.): "Sir, we're in a terrible position! Fifteen machine guns are peppering us and we will soon be annihilated."

O.C. (very calmly): "Very well, tell the men to stand easy. (To fellow officer) I say, old man, have we any shilling tickets for next week's concert?"

16th (Service) Battalion Northumberland Fusiliers 21

At Codford, the football team really got into its stride. Every match was won; an aggregate of thirty-two goals scored compared well with the total of only four scored against us. One of the matches was against Bath City, at Bath, in the presence of about four hundred officers and men from the battalion, and a fair crowd of civilians. This game resulted in a battalion victory by three goals to nil. The Rugby fifteen defeated the 15th Battalion Lancashire Fusiliers by twenty points to nil: and the Soccer team rounded up its performances by winning the Brigade competition.

In October a Divisional cross-country run was held, teams of twenty men per company competing over a four miles course. The placings were:

1st—17th Highland Light Infantry.

2nd—17th Northumberland Fusiliers (Pioneers).

3rd—16th Northumberland Fusiliers.

For the 16th, "A" Company ran very well, actually finishing second in 29 minutes 22 seconds. "C," "D," and "B" Companies finished respectively 14th, 16th and 18th in just over 31 minutes.

Other social events relieved the tense training. The 16th Concert Party earned a great name, and was much in request in the neighbouring towns in aid of Red Cross Funds, Hospitals, etc. The Military Committee of the Chamber of Commerce visited the camp on 17th October. It was a great pleasure to have the members, and very gratifying to know that they had arranged to supply the battalion with comforts when it went overseas.

While getting rid of some superfluous bombs preparatory to departure, Second-Lieutenant W. Ramsay, the bombing officer, had an unfortunate accident, happily not too severe. The worst part about it was that the Medical Officer decided that Ramsay could not accompany the battalion overseas. His disappointment was bitter. Later this officer joined the Tyneside Scottish, rose to the rank of Captain and won the Military Cross.

November was a busy month, for the date of sailing was near. Several officers and men were surplus to establishment, and perforce were sent to join the Depot Battalion, the 31st Northumberland Fusiliers, under Major T. P. A. Rose at Scotton. No one liked to be "surplus": parting meant the severance of happy companionships. A clearing-up party under Lieutenant W. P. Simm was detailed to stay behind and hand over the camp.

22 16th (Service) Battalion Northumberland Fusiliers

It was expected that this party would rejoin the battalion in France: but, due to the mysterious workings of the Army, it never did.

Came the orders to move! Long hoped for, earnestly prayed for, they arrived at last. All the hard training was about to be put to the test. The first to move was the transport, commanded by Lieutenant Edwards. During the night of 20th November, 1915, the wagons pulled out to travel by a different route. The excitement was intense, and the troops turned out to cheer them off. Active service at last! At 10.30 p.m. the battalion marched out of camp in two parties, "A" and "B" Companies leading, followed by "C" and "D." The entraining at Codford was very smartly carried out, and soon two trains, laden with soldiers of His Majesty's "Fighting Fifth," glided out into the night, bound for Folkestone and the Glorious Adventure beyond.

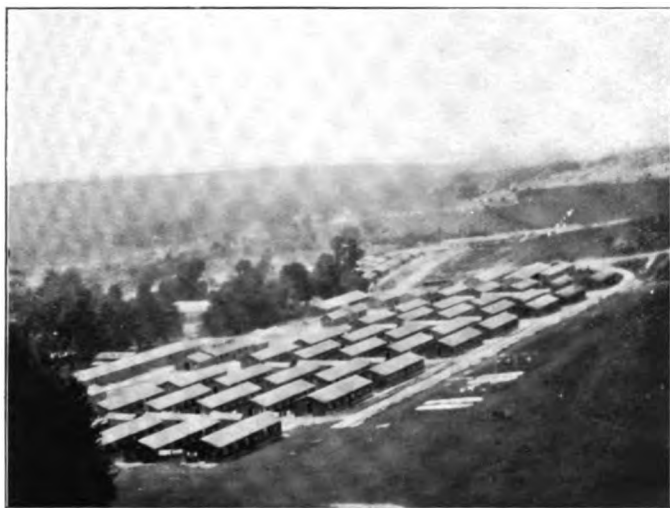


Photo by]

CAMP, CODFORD ST. MARY.

[J. Penman.



Drawn by]

FRENCH VILLAGE SCENE. *[C. Wade, 16th Bn.*

CHAPTER VI

FRANCE—FIRST IMPRESSIONS

THE battalion arrived at Boulogne on 22nd November. Many were not sorry that the crossing was over. Discipline on board the transports was exacting. Every man wore a life-belt: in case of unpremeditated immersion in the sea, they would, no doubt, have been useful, but their bulk was somewhat awkward in certain other cases. The trip across was by no means without danger: to some, however, the terrors of submarines were as nothing. Their uneasiness had a cause much nearer home!

It was a relief to be on the Quay, and to watch the bustling Embarkation Officers. "Cushy job," was a phrase that floated around, seemingly apropos of nothing in particular. Our advance billeting officer, Lieutenant C. W. Porter, met us in Boulogne, where he was living in state in an hotel and doing duty on the Quay. Soon the battalion was on its way up that long steep hill, which many have struggled up since, to Ostrahove Camp on the top. The march, in spite of heavy packs, was very interesting. The curiosity of the natives, the strange scenes, the rapid talk in a strange language—these incidents kept the attention from dwelling too long on heavy packs and the stiffness of the gradient.

On reaching the camp tents were allotted, and a meal provided. The officers were catered for in an Officers' Rest Hut: and some obtained permission to go sight seeing in the town. Next day, the permission was accorded the whole battalion—through the medium of a route march.

At dusk on the 24th November the next stage began. We left the Camp and marched to the Gare Centrale, only to be subjected to a great indignity. Mere cattle trucks were provided either for man or beast. The devastating words "40 Hommes ou 8 chevaux, en long" stared at us in big white letters. There was nothing for it but to get the "hommes ou chevaux" aboard, for the "Q" branch of the staff knew to a mule the cargo to be carried. It was easy enough to get the 40 men into their "Noah's Ark," but the mules were not so tractable. They evidently did not understand

French, for the unruly beasts positively refused to submit to the "en long" position. "No wonder," said the sage but exasperated driver, "that Thingummybob said they were without pride of ancestry or hope of posterity." There were many variations of that theme, in less philosophic manner.

About half-past eight the train started, and jogged along steadily, if leisurely, through the night. It did get to its destination, Longpré, a tiny station. Here we were detrained by an old friend, camouflaged as a Staff Captain; we crept out of the trucks and formed up on the road outside the station. It was still dark, and bitterly cold; a long wait ensued before orders came to move off. Eventually, someone was found who thought he knew the way, and the battalion began its march. Truck-cramp still held the limbs in stiff bondage; the cold did not tend to improve matters. Packs became heavier and heavier with each succeeding mile, for an early morning march is a sore trial.

Amongst the sufferers were several conscientious subalterns. (Such did exist at that stage.) No kit had to be more than 35 lbs. in weight; and theirs tipped the scale at the regulation figure. Spare kit, and the odds and ends supplied by loving friends, were therefore carried "on the man." Weary minds cursed the idiotic limit of 35 lbs: temptation to jettison the extra kit was strong; and the conscientious subaltern vowed darkly that *his* valise, at any rate, would no longer be of regulation weight.

The third halt found everybody just about satisfied with the length of the march. A senior officer walked down the line, and, in order to cheer up the tired men, called out: "Keep going, boys. This is the last lap." It was not; nor was the next one. Consequently "last lap" became a sort of password in the battalion, a never-failing source of inspiration for the platoon comedians.

As the pale light of dawn shed its ghastly light on the weary troops, the battalion, mustering up its usual swing, marched into Domqueur. Three companies were billeted there, "C" Company continuing another mile farther on to Le Plouy, where Brigade Headquarters were located. Soon the cooks had a good meal ready, a welcome repast. The billets were chiefly barns and outhouses: but everyone was glad enough to remove equipment, tumble in the straw, and sleep. This day and the following one were spent in cleaning up and in inspection parades.

Plenty of time was available to study the surroundings and to practise our knowledge of French on the long-suffering natives. "Madame, avez-vous any œufs?" "Parlez-vous English?" and

like conglomerations were frequently to be heard. But, in the two days, the vocabulary was enlarged. From the words learnt then, it would be possible to get a fairly exact indication of the hobbies of the learners. The estaminets—and many of these small public-houses sprang into existence after the advent of British soldiers—did a flourishing business in beer, and other strange beverages of vivid hues. French beer has been so often described—about once to every drink—that little remains to be said of it. The little that may be said *for* it will probably never be said by a Britisher!

The guns could just be faintly heard, “a sound like the distant shaking of blankets,” as one officer put it. At night, the sky was illuminated by the flashes: that weirdly fascinating semicircle of fitful light was our destination—the battlefield.

After a stay of three days in Domqueur, the battalion buckled on its harness and again took the road. This march was uneventful. Village after village was passed; they were all strangely alike, typical of the Somme area. Mud-and-straw cottages; farmsteads whitewashed and thatched; open cesspools and slimy village ponds; noble farm horses, and grotesque combinations of farm-yokes; rough roads and good roads; copses and well-tilled fields; hosts of children to whom baths were apparently unknown; clatter of sabots; clitter-clatter of tongues—all these were soon to become matters of course. Through Flixecourt the battalion marched, and halted for the night at Bourdon, overlooking the marshes of the Somme.

The hunt for billets was always a potential source of adventure. Officers of “B” Company here found theirs. The billeting officer and the interpreter found a spruce little house. It was owned by a French officer, who was in hospital at Amiens, and was due to return home the next day. On explaining to the caretaker that the battalion was to move early the next morning, the officers were allowed to enter. Dinner was served later, only to be interrupted by the arrival of the French officer and his wife. They were greatly surprised to find eight British officers sitting round their dining-table. Madame, it must be confessed, was more than surprised: she became very irate, and insisted on the intruders being turned out. Her husband, after much coaxing and with profuse apologies to the officers, retired with her to the local hotel for the night. Next morning, at 6 a.m., he appeared in pyjamas and great-coat to bid “B” Company farewell. With much ceremony he opened a trapdoor in the floor; and from the cellar he produced a bottle of wine to drink the health of the officers who had come to fight for his beloved country.

The battalion trekked that day to Cardonnelle, a small village

some miles north-east of Amiens. Two days were spent there. The weather was very cold, and one man, sliding over the village pond, broke his arm and so postponed his introduction to the trenches.

On the morning of 30th November, we left Cardonnette, and began one of the longest and most uninteresting marches we ever did. This was along the straight main Amiens—Albert—Bapaume road. It is a seemingly endless avenue of pavé, deady monotonous, cruelly dispiriting. One comes to hate the sight of the tall trees, and to loathe the rattle of the passing traffic. Undoubtedly it is a fine road; but to heavily laden infantry its endless miles brought no joy.

It was dark before the battalion reached Dernancourt. Here "B" and "C" Companies were to be accommodated. They halted, and looked pityingly on their comrades of "A" and "D" who had to march farther on to Méaulte. Both Dernancourt and Méaulte were already occupied by troops, and the 16th had to make the best of what billets were left. Candidly, the best were bad: but in the excitement of the closeness of the front line, only three miles away, there was little grouching. The sound of the guns was very loud: rifle and machine-gun fire could be heard distinctly; the semicircle of light was much more vivid; Vêry lights shone brilliantly as they sank slowly to earth. During the night two or three shells burst in Dernancourt, the first seen by us at close quarters. At that stage, however, they were more objects of curiosity than shedders of fear.

The next morning we viewed our new quarters by daylight. Méaulte was a fairly large village with a green in the centre, and not then much damaged. It was crowded with troops, mostly men of the 18th Division, who had been our predecessors at Codford, and were now experienced fighters. Dernancourt was the muddiest place yet experienced: and the inhabitants were not over genial. One woman who had some officers billeted in her house would not allow them to use the front door: all entries and exits were made through the window. However, all ranks were cheerful and eager to get into the line to see the trenches. This desire was soon gratified, for next day parties of officers and N.C.O.'s were attached to the 7th Bedfords and the 11th Royal Fusiliers, who were holding the line near Fricourt. Thus the introduction to the battle front was under the kindly wing of the 54th Brigade of the 18th Division.

CHAPTER VII

UP THE LINE

ON 1st December, 1915, the advance party entered the front trenches for the first time. Officers and N.C.O.'s left Méaulte and Dernancourt, and were guided by a much mud-bespattered lance-corporal. He conducted the party through "Happy Valley," the home of the supporting field guns, to the "Citadel." This was a most astonishing place, a regular colony of dug-outs and dumps; from it radiated all the communication trenches. The Citadel was occupied by all sorts of people: engineers, a pioneer battalion, the support battalion for the line, and the Headquarters of the front line battalions. On reporting to the Headquarters of the 7th Bedfords and 11th Royal Fusiliers, the party was split up and conducted by other guides to the companies at the farther ends of the communication trenches. The twenty-four hours spent with them were quiet: our mentors looked after the parties extremely well, and spared no pains to give everyone a thorough insight into trench work. An occasional sniper interfered; a few rifle grenades were thrown over; but otherwise there was no untoward incident.

The trenches were muddy. Mud and the Somme will forever be associated in our minds. At one point the trench was only twenty yards from the German position. On being relieved by another party of officers and N.C.O.'s the "first shift" returned to billets to describe, with wealth of detail, the results of their adventure. The same night a working party of two companies under Captain G. Nesbit marched up to a position behind the line to dig a trench. Work proceeded satisfactorily, the great drawback being a playful German machine-gunner who, at irregular intervals, deemed it necessary to shower bullets amongst the party. Eventually, a shot hit Private A. Wilson, of "B" Company, in the leg. He had the honour of being the battalion's first casualty.

Two platoons from each company went into the line on 3rd December, and were relieved two days later by the other two platoons per company. During this tour, Private Welford, "A" Company, was killed. Keen to get a shot at an annoying sniper,

he unfortunately exposed himself twice in the same position. He was shot through the head. With this exception we had a quiet time, and really enjoyed our first experience of trenches.

On the 7th, the whole battalion came into the line, each company being attached to a battalion of the 18th Division. A small mine was blown opposite "B" Company's front the first night that we went in. Some of our bombers were sent up to occupy the lip of the crater. The mine appeared to be most successful in flattening out our own front trench, but whether it had the same effect on the German line we were never quite sure, but it must have done some damage, for very soon some Germans were seen repairing their parapet. As we were busy repairing ours also, we thought it best to ignore these bull's-eye targets; the Hun was allowed to work in peace, but a machine gun was ready in case they should interfere with us.

The German Intelligence did not take long to become aware of our existence. How they found out was a mystery, but one fine morning they were heard, much to our surprise, to call out "Hallo! Northumberland."

The mud in the trenches was our worst enemy. Several men stuck in the communication trenches which were particularly bad, and had to be pulled out with ropes.

The day following our going into the line, the 18th Division went out and left us in sole possession, our instruction being complete. We very soon settled down and continued to study the occupants of the trench in front of us. We learnt that these particular Huns were fairly quiet people and most regular in their habits. Each day at the same times they shelled the same places and rarely put any "stuff" over during the night. Their snipers were our chief trouble and, although we had practically no casualties, we soon learned not to be too curious and anxious to peer over the top. Very few Germans were ever seen to show themselves, which was rather disheartening to our scouts and snipers under Lieutenant Lucette and Sergeant Ellis, who spent many a long day gazing through telescopes from their observation posts. However, their patience was occasionally rewarded. A little later the scouts started a new game. They lighted bonfires in unoccupied positions behind our line in order to attract the German artillery fire. As soon as the Hun started shooting, our wily scouts proceeded to "observe" from their observation posts and take bearings on the gun flashes in order to assist our own gunners to locate the enemy battery positions.

Mines were very popular in this sector. Sappers were busy day

and night preparing tunnels from our front line and most of our spare men were employed in carrying away the sandbags full of earth (called "spoil" by the initiated). The air in these tunnels was always very foul, and often loaded with marsh gas. One day some sappers were almost suffocated and would certainly have died had they not been gallantly rescued by C.S.M. Saville and Lance-Corporal R. W. Ellis, of "C" Company.

On 15th December we were relieved by the Royal Fusiliers and marched to Albert. Here we were billeted in the Hospital, in the grounds of which a battery of field guns had taken up its abode. Albert was quite a large place which had suffered considerably from hostile shell fire. The houses in the square near the Cathedral were the most damaged. The Cathedral itself was in ruins, but the tall spire still stood surmounted by the gilded figure of the Virgin holding her child. This figure had been struck by a shell and was hanging over, suspended by one or two steel supports. It seemed as if it might fall to the ground at any moment. It was said that some of the inhabitants believed that, when it fell, the war would come to an end. (It did not fall until 1918, when the town was captured by the Germans.) Most of the inhabitants had evacuated the town, but a few of the poorer people still remained. They kept tea-shops and sold picture postcards and other souvenirs to the troops. They appeared to be quite unconcerned about shells although plenty dropped in the town every day.

We remained in Albert providing working parties for the Royal Engineers until 20th December, when we returned to the trenches. This time we went into the sector known as E2, to the left of our last position. The mud here was even worse than before, and the weather was none too good. In this Sector we made the acquaintance of the "Tambour," the "Elo" and the "Glory Hole," all places of bad repute, and, we should imagine, very distinctly marked on the maps of the German gunners for constant attention. The companies each took their turn in the front line, support and reserve trenches, and we spent a fairly quiet time on the whole. One night a large German working party was seen in No Man's Land, but they disappeared very promptly when we opened fire.

On 27th December the Germans blew a mine, and at the same time treated us to a heavy bombardment of trench mortars, rifle grenades and whizz-bangs. The Boche kept this up for some time, and the battalion was relieved before it finished. Our own guns, however, began a neat little retaliation: their sound made welcome music. On the night of the 23rd, Captain D. Lindsay,

commanding "C" Company, was wounded, thus being our first officer casualty.

Christmas Day was uneventful; but the Germans opposite were singing as if they were holding a concert. Many men wore a very far-away look. Their thoughts had crossed the sea and were with the home people, picturing their comforts, and their pleasant, if subdued, festivities.

The battalion was relieved on the 29th December, and marched back to Albert. Here a halt was called for a meal, and the troops then proceeded to Millencourt, about three miles farther "back," arriving there after dark. The next two days were spent in removing mud, and polishing up, a laborious, if necessary, business. All were smart on the occasion of the arrival at Millencourt of the 2nd Battalion Royal Inniskilling Fusiliers, commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel J. Crawford, D.S.O. We welcomed them to the 96th Infantry Brigade in place of the 19th Battalion Lancashire Fusiliers transferred to the 14th Infantry Brigade. Although a Regular Battalion; and rather inclined at first to look down upon a Service Battalion, we quickly formed a loyal and lasting friendship. There are many officers and men of the 16th who will always have a kindly thought for those good-hearted, devil-may-care men from the north of Ireland.

New Year's Day was a holiday. Inter-company matches were arranged for the morning and a match against the 2nd Royal Inniskilling Fusiliers in the afternoon. A special dinner was provided for the men, consisting of roast beef, plum pudding, etc. Extra issues were made of tobacco, cigarettes, sweets and fruit. The arrangements were highly satisfactory; and the men enjoyed the good fare provided. That evening all the officers dined together for the first time since the arrival of the battalion in France, and celebrated the New Year in the good old North Country fashion.

On the 2nd January, 1916, the battalion, less three officers and a hundred men, moved to Martinsart. The detachment proceeded to garrison Mount Keep. Several days were spent in Martinsart, which was the muddiest of all villages. We cleaned and repaired roads and worked on the defences there. We moved into the trenches again on January 6th and took over G2 Sector to the left again of our last trenches. As we spent several months in and out of this particular part of the line, a short description of it follows.

The front line system ran along the top of the east bank of the River Ancre, which was thickly wooded. The river turned in a big



"LONDON BRIDGE."
Christmas Day, 1915.



96TH INFANTRY BRIGADE STAFF.
July, 1916.

bend and crossed the line to the left of us, the trenches running right down to the water, the river being more of a swamp than a well-defined river at this point. Opposite and slightly to the left of us were the ruins of Thiepval just behind the German front line. A part of the château still stood and could be seen from our line. We spent four days here which were fairly quiet except for a few shells and an objectionable kind of trench mortar which we nicknamed "The Oil Drum" or "Canister."

"B" Company suffered rather badly from the latter. A number of these falling into their trenches caused several casualties, and four men were completely buried, but were dug out again, fortunately very little the worse, Sergeant B. K. Barnes and Corporal J. Ballantyne effecting the rescue. Barnes, who was partially buried himself, managed to wriggle free, and, although more shells were falling near, he scraped the earth from the faces of the buried men, thus enabling them to breathe until spades were brought and the men were dug out. For this, together with another act of gallantry a little later on, Sergeant Barnes received the D.O.M.

The 15th Battalion H.L.I. relieved us on the 10th January, and the battalion returned to Millencourt. The next day the Commander-in-Chief, Sir Douglas Haig, rode through the village, but did not stop. A week later the battalion was inspected by His Grace the Duke of Northumberland, K.G. The Duke was accompanied by Captain Napier, Secretary of the Northumberland Territorial Association, and had come to France at the request of that Association to inspect the Territorial Battalions of the Northumberland Fusiliers. On his arrival the battalion was drawn up in review order, and afterwards marched past.

The Duke made a short speech in which he mentioned that the last time he inspected the battalion was on the pastures at Alnwick, and said how pleased he was to have the opportunity of inspecting it again in France. He concluded by complimenting the 16th on its smartness.

This parade was under the command of Major A. W. Little, as Colonel Ritson was ill. The next day, to the great distress of the battalion, the Colonel was taken to hospital at Warloy, his condition having become worse. His continued absence caused some changes. Major Archer became temporarily second-in-command; and "D" Company was commanded by Lieutenant Wake. "A" Company was now commanded by Captain Harvey; and, owing to the absence of Captain Thompson at the Army School at Flixecourt, Captain Dunghinson took over "O" Company. Thus commanded, the battalion moved again into G2 Sector on 19th January.

The 32nd Divisional Artillery which had up to this time been attached to the 31st Division and had gone east with them, now rejoined us, and thought that they had better justify their existence by letting the enemy know that they had arrived. Consequently, the day after we got back to the trenches they opened out and let the enemy have thirty-five minutes of their very best, as hard as they could fire. The retaliation was a feeble effort. The rest of the time was quite quiet. Patrolling No Man's Land was carried out enthusiastically. Lieutenants Proctor, McLean and Falconer each conducted a party over the top, the last named bringing back some good information as to the ground condition, but no trace of enemy patrols was ever seen.

On the 21st we went back to Authuille (about a mile behind the line), where we became Brigade Reserve, and for the next few days the whole battalion was occupied in providing working parties for the Royal Engineers. These journeyed nightly up to the line to repair damaged trenches. Two platoons under Lieutenant Proctor were left as a garrison for Gordon Castle, which was a strong point in our support line. Here also lived a Company of the 17th Northumberland Fusiliers who were occupied in constructing deep dug-outs.

On the 26th January the whole battalion moved back to Millencourt, and soon new work was afoot. In the "F" Sector the front line ran in a big curve or re-entrant and a scheme was evolved to dig a new front line in front of the old one and so straighten and advance our position. In order that this might be completed quickly, two very large parties were required, one for digging, and the other for erecting a new belt of wire entanglement. Expert wirers and hefty diggers were selected from each of the battalions in the Brigade, and after some practice at Millencourt proceeded on the evening of 2nd February to carry out this scheme.

Captain Dunglison and Lieutenant Wake were in charge of our wirers, and Lieutenants Watson and Falconer took command of the digging party. Lieutenant Avery, who was also to have been included, was evacuated to hospital with a poisoned arm the day before. The work was done exceedingly well. The wire was completed and the trench dug six feet deep on the first night. We had no casualties at all amongst our men, and although about eight hundred men were employed altogether, there were only about three men of the other battalions hit. The old Boche must have got quite a surprise when he peered over his parapet next morning and saw a new trench opposite him a hundred or so yards

nearer than the old one had been. The next night the diggers went up again and finished the new trench.

The most uncomfortable conditions could not repress the Tyne-siders' humour. It was a blessing that they could see the funny side of affairs that would otherwise have caused a mental collapse. One wiring party had been out some time in No Man's Land and had succeeded in erecting a creditable obstacle of barbed wire. On receiving the order to return to the trench, one of the party looked proudly at the finished job and remarked solemnly to his officer: "It'll be a b—— clivor cat that gets into wor garden eftor this war, sor."

The 6th of February saw us marching up to Martinsart once more, where we became Divisional Reserve. Garrisons were found for Authuille Keep, McMahon's Post and Mill Keep. These Keeps were in the form of a reserve line and were in commanding positions behind the trenches so that in the event of the enemy attacking us, supporting fire could be brought to bear on the attackers. They also guarded the railway cutting and the river which cut the line on the left of the Divisional Sector. The rest of the battalion was employed with the 17th Northumberland Fusiliers, constructing the Martinsart defences and working on the roads. On the 11th February some hostile shrapnel wounded Lieutenant Southern at McMahon's Post. His wound was not serious, but he had to be evacuated to England. Lieutenant J. Watson was sent up to relieve him. "A" and "D" Companies were relieved by the 5th Yorks. Regiment on the 12th and they marched back to Millencourt, followed the next day by the two remaining companies.

During the next month we continued to journey backward and forward between the front line and Millencourt, going six or eight days in the front line, four in support at Authuille or Black Horse Bridge and four in reserve at Bouzincourt or Millencourt. Nothing out of the ordinary happened. The weather became very severe, and we had several heavy snowstorms. The initial thrill of trench warfare had long since died down and things seemed nothing more than a monotonous routine. We perhaps preferred the front line because, although the dug-outs were not very good and it was very cold, there were not so many R.E. fatigues to be found. Fatigues always caused grouching. The Sappers imagined a battalion to consist of one thousand men and called for working parties accordingly, whereas our fighting strength was perhaps less than six hundred. Further, the work we did never seemed to benefit us directly. If we dug out a trench in G1 Sector while, say, the Lancashire Fusiliers held it, we ourselves went into G2, and by the time

we returned to G1 the trench had been blown in again! However, we all realised that these jobs had to be done, and they were well and truly done.

The battalion had been fairly fortunate regarding casualties. Very few occurred, but a platoon of "B" Company, who were usually rather unlucky, was caught by a salvo of whizz-bangs in Chorley Street, and several men were knocked out. There were casualties of another nature, for evidently the Higher Authorities had their eyes on the 16th. About this time they fixed their gaze on Captain Harvey, who departed to the Divisional Staff. His company was taken over temporarily by Lieutenant Proctor.

During the night of 10th March, while the battalion was at Bouzincourt in reserve, a heavy bombardment of the front line began. Orders were received to stand to in readiness to move up if required. Soon afterwards the order to move arrived, but the shelling ceased before the battalion reached the line. We were not required, and were soon despatched again to billets. "B" Company, at Crucifix Corner was standing to in the support trench when they noticed the presence of gas. Soon afterwards, the Brigadier with the Brigade-Major arrived on the scene to find the men wearing their gas masks. He scouted the idea of gas: but very soon he and his Staff Officer sniffed something. When they left the party they also had their gas masks ready.

We learned the next day that the Germans had raided the 16th Lancashire Fusiliers, who had suffered many casualties, including two officers killed and one taken prisoner. Their trenches had been badly knocked about, as we knew when we relieved them next day. This was the first of a series of raids on the tit-for-tat principle. In fact, raiding, encouraged by General Yatman, became a very popular and frequent pastime. Summed up, a raid consisted of, generally, a preliminary bombardment, a rush, a scuffle, and the return with the required information, or with prisoners. Yet, in these routine raids there was infinite scope for ingenuity, courage, and resource; they were intensely realistic soldiering.

About this period we had our first leave allotment, and, although it was not so generous as we would have liked, one or two fortunate beings got away each day. Leave! The very word thrilled everyone: happily the lucky ones departed, while the others, to be candid, were envious. We have all had the happiness; we have all, all too frequently, felt the envy. Time will never efface the memories of the first leave!

The weather improved, and one Sunday morning, towards the

end of March, when everyone was glad to be out, and all was quiet in the trenches, the Hun suddenly sent over a number of "Oil-cans." One of these burst quite near to Captain Thompson, O.C., "C" Company, who was sitting at the entrance of his dug-out. The explosion blew him down the steps into his subterranean abode, much to the astonishment of his second-in-command, Captain A. C. Young, who at that moment was taking cover. Strangely enough, no one suffered any damage, and the incident ended in a hearty laugh.

New officers had joined us; others had departed. One of the newcomers, Lieutenant Harris, created some amusement in his platoon. He was on duty in the trenches for the first time, and was halted by a sentry. The following dialogue took place:

SENTRY: "Halt! Who goes there?"

LIEUT. H.: "Er—er—Mr—er—Harris."

SENTRY: "Don't know you, sir. What company do you belong to?"

LIEUT. H.: "Er—er—'B' Company, sentry."

SENTRY: "I'm in 'B' Company, and I've never seen you before. Do you know the name of the Company Commander?"

LIEUT. H.: "Er—er—I—er—don't know his name, sentry."

At this point matters began to get awkward, for Harris had never met the O.C. Company, Captain Graham, who was on leave at the time. In order to try and change the conversation, he produced his revolver, of which he was very proud, and fired rapidly into the barbed wire beyond. This did not impress the vigilant sentry; but Harris ultimately established his identity. From then onwards he made a point of being accompanied by a N.C.O. who knew him.

Colonel Ritson rejoined the battalion on 22nd March. He had been recuperating in the south of France; and all ranks welcomed his return.

Winter had a last fling on the 24th, snow falling heavily. But with the return of brighter weather, the mud in the trenches dried, until finally we were able to sweep up with a broom. Clean trenches were one of the outward and visible signs of a well-disciplined battalion: it is better to be able to sweep a trench than to bale out the mud!

The incidents of the day soon passed into song. Some ingenious parodist, in the intervals of telling his people at home that he was "in the pink," would take some event, and shape it to fit a well-known tune. Thus did "A" Company evolve the famous song, of which the chorus ran: "No shave—no parcels." For had not

the Colonel threatened to stop the parcels coming up with the rations if he found the men unshaven?

Each tour in the line saw the extensive wiring operations progressing. At dusk each evening, the shadowy forms of subalterns and their experts slipped over the parapet into No Man's Land. The forms seemed curiously bulged, or grotesquely elongated; for they bore coils of wire and bundles of pickets. For hours they worked strengthening the defences, thus protecting the battalion from being surprised by inquisitive raiders from over the way.

On one occasion instructions had been received to erect a barbed wire entanglement over a small mound in front of our line. Work was duly begun one very frosty night, and as the enemy was not far away every precaution was taken to ensure quick and silent work. Presently the O.C. discovered that there were no more iron screw pickets and whispered to a hardy Northumbrian miner to crawl back to get some. This man had almost reached the top of the mound on his return journey when his foot slipped on the frozen surface and down he rolled with his burden of iron stakes and barbed wire coils. Immediately, fire was opened by the enemy in the direction of all this noise, and the wiring party lay as close to Mother Earth as they could get. But the cause of all the commotion having rolled to the foot of the hill sat bolt upright, and in a loud Northumbrian voice demanded: "Did ye see that slip, sor? Aa might ha' been killed."

CHAPTER VIII

REST BILLETS—AND PREPARATION

On the 3rd April the battalion was relieved in the front line, and, after resting the night at Bouzincourt, proceeded to Pierregot for the much-yearned-for and long-promised rest. At Pierregot we all had very good billets, and settled down to make the most of the spell out of the "Danger Zone." Of course, as any soldier will willingly testify, "rest" does not mean holiday. It is merely rest from the bulk of the shell fire. Actually it meant hard work, though free from the chance of sudden death.

It was customary to allow one day for cleaning and polishing; then the sergeants got a move on with the barrack-square stuff. It was really astonishing how a spell in the trenches rendered the muscles sluggish: but the battalion very quickly recovered its normal precision. Dummy attacks were practised; Lewis gunners performed with their deadly weapon; the bombers showed their elegant attitudes; and route marches along the pretty country roads were frequent. The rolling country round Pierregot was delightful in the spring.

The afternoons and evenings were free. Football teams were formed; and, with a view to the forthcoming Brigade competition, cross-country runs were arranged. The surprise of the "rest" was the wonderful theatrical show produced by "A" Company. This had been prepared in secret, and the scenery, dresses, and lighting effects were all improvised by the performers and their stage-manager, Corporal B. Carr, who had written most of the words. The show was given several times, and the Colonel was so pleased with its success that he asked for a special performance for the General. Songs, popular choruses, and the ever-appreciated burlesques of officers made up a diverting programme. Topical jokes kept the audience in shrieks of mirth; and everyone, especially the burlesqued officers whose mannerisms were so well portrayed, thoroughly enjoyed the show.

The Brigade cross-country run took place on 15th April. Here

the 2nd Battalion Inniskillings occupied the first three places, the 16th being fourth.

Towards the end of the stay at Pierregot there were two or three Brigade Staff Rides, in which nearly all the officers and several N.C.O.'s took part. Trenches were marked out with white tape; villages and roads were represented; and although many soon observed that these were a copy of our old sectors, G1 and G2, not one ever imagined the reason underlying these pleasant exercises. The enormity of the task ahead was mercifully hidden from us all. We enjoyed the make-believe; the grim reality came later.

The battalion moved from Pierregot on 23rd April, St George's Day. In spite of the order to march in battle order, we managed to keep up the Regimental custom, and moved off, "tin hats" notwithstanding, with the red and white roses in position. Drums and transport were also decorated, and the battalion created quite a sensation as it marched through Rubempré, Hérissart, Contay and Warloy. We left Pierregot with many regrets. The stay there had been beneficial; all had enjoyed the rest, and returned to the line ready for anything.

Senlis was reached during the afternoon, and at night the officers celebrated St George's Day by all dining together. The guests were Brigadier-General C. Yatman, Major R. Stephenson (18th Northumberland Fusiliers), Captain A. A. Johnson, and Captain J. Harvey, all very old friends of the battalion. It was a merry evening.

The next day the battalion moved to Black Horse Bridge, and relieved the 2nd Battalion K.O.Y.L.I., "C" Company garrisoning the Keeps. For the succeeding days, we provided working parties in the line for the Royal Engineers, and on 28th April took over the front line trenches from the Inniskillings. Our return was duly celebrated by the enemy, who the next night put down a heavy barrage lasting an hour. Everyone stood to, awaiting a raid, but none was made. The following day was spent repairing the damage caused by the bombardment. During this tour of trench duty, parties of Engineers and Inniskillings came up to dig a new line of trench in front of our line. The work was done at the cost of only one casualty.

On being relieved, the battalion moved to Aveluy, "C" and "D" Companies going into dug-outs at Crucifix Corner, about a mile from Aveluy. The village was not very far behind the line, and was often under shell-fire, but we liked it. Most of the houses were ruined, but the place was full of flowers in what



Photo by]

AUTHUILLE SECTOR.
June, 1916.

[Major L. B. Proctor, M.C.



Photo by]

LA BOISSELLE : SHOWING ALBERT-BAPAUME ROAD.

[Lieut. Webb, M.C.

had once been well-kept gardens. All the messes were brightened with the blooms; "A" Company, now commanded by Captain A. C. Young, boasted a wonderful display of tulips, to view which became a sort of duty. "A.C.Y." was very fond of flowers, and expected everyone to share his enthusiasm. Aveluy is on the Ancre River, and is skirted by the main Albert-Arras railway. To the north lies the extensive Aveluy Wood. There was little time for much exploration, however, as we did R.E. fatigues all day.

On the night of 5th May, the 15th Lancashire Fusiliers made a raid on the enemy trenches. They succeeded in capturing five prisoners, but unfortunately the officer commanding the raiding party was killed. The prisoners were handed over to Lieutenant Porter, who marched them to Divisional Headquarters at Senlis. He passed through Aveluy, and several turned out to inspect the captured. Next day the battalion moved to Bouzincourt, but continued to find working parties for the Sappers.

We were soon to learn the hidden reason for the Staff Rides from Pierregot. On 9th May, the Commanding Officer, with his Company Commanders and one representative per platoon, proceeded to the old ground between Baizieux and Bavelincourt Wood. Here a scheme of attack was practised and discussed. The scheme was practised several times during the next few days, and we began gradually to realise what it all meant.

Fierce arguments took place between junior officers and amongst the men as to whether the skeleton village which had been called Sackville, because it was made of sacks, was really meant to be Thiepval or not. The taped-out trenches certainly did resemble the real ones in our old "G" Sector. It was not until some time after that we were definitely told that we had guessed right, and that on a certain date, "to be notified later," we were to leap from our trenches, capture the village of Thiepval and proceed to a trench known as Mouquet Switch beyond.

Practice attacks over the ground near Bavelincourt Wood and Baizieux took place about twice a week, and now that we had learnt the truth everyone was very keen to make quite sure of the particular job that he was expected to perform. We were sick of our old front line, and the idea of an advance appealed to us. No one imagined that it would cost us what it did. By this time the battalion had moved into tents in Vadencourt Wood. The weather was perfect, and the twelve days that we spent under canvas were among the happiest since we left England, in spite of the fact that we were all inoculated during the time. Meals

were taken out in the open under the trees. We played football, and visits to Amiens were also permitted. Most of the messes possessed gramophones, and after dinner in the evening it was very pleasant to see the candles burning beneath the trees and listen to the music of the gramophone.

We returned to the trenches on the 30th May after spending the previous night in tents in Aveluy Wood. Back in the line we carried on as usual. Patrols and wiring parties every night crept out to do their work. The sector was not nearly so quiet and peaceful as it had been when we first took it over in January, and some members of another Division who boasted that they had come down to the Somme district from the Ypres Salient for a rest, soon changed their tune. In fact they did not like our trenches at all. However, we lived in hopes of soon dashing madly out of them and capturing Thiepval, Contalmaison and Bapaume, and so on to Berlin, and therefore carried on with our daily toils until this great hour should arrive.

At the beginning of June we moved to dug-outs at Black Horse Bridge. These dug-outs were in the side of a steep bank on the east of the River Ancre, and when we were not "on fatigue" we amused ourselves with rafts on the river, and some of us bathed.

On the night of the 5th June, while we were still at Black Horse Bridge, a party of 11th Border Regiment made a raid on the enemy trenches. Unfortunately, Captain Barnes of the Borders, who had organised the whole thing and led the raiders over the top, was killed on our own parapet whilst returning. Apart from this sad factor the raid was a success, and the eleven prisoners they captured were handed over to us to be conducted to the Divisional Headquarters. In our battalion dressing station some of the wounded were being attended to, when some wounded Germans were brought in. A Corporal of the Borders suddenly noticed a Hun having his head tied up, and remarked to the Medical Officer, "That bloke must have a hard head, sir—he's the fellow I hit three times with a knoberry and I couldn't get him killed."

During the time we were at Black Horse Bridge we heard that Colonel Ritson had had the C.M.G. conferred on him, and Sergeant B. K. Barnes, of "B" Company, the D.C.M.

During our next tour in the front line we attempted to dig a new trench in front of a small copse, known as Diamond Wood, in No Man's Land. The wire was erected, but the enemy machine-gun fire was so intense that it was impossible for the diggers to

make any progress, and finally the scheme had to be abandoned. We were relieved on the 13th June, and the battalion proceeded to billets at Warloy-Baillon, arriving there at 4 a.m. the next day.

For the next week we practised the attack scheme over the dummy trenches at Baizieux, until all were perfectly acquainted with their duties. The last two or three times a smoke screen was put up and smoke bombs were exploded in different places to represent a "War Haze." The Army and Corps Commanders were present one day and addressed the officers at the conclusion of operations. We were told that our artillery preparations were to be so complete that no Germans would be left alive in their front line system, and that Thiepval was to be completely flattened so that it would be impossible for even a rat to exist in it. All we had to do was to follow the barrage to our "final objective" and dig in. This all sounded perfectly simple, and although, in our innermost hearts, we all anticipated a little more opposition than this, we believed that we had a comparatively easy task, and chaffed each other about lunches in Contalmaison after the attack.

"A" and "B" Companies were to form the leading waves of attackers, a platoon from each forming one wave. "C" Company was to be in support, and to follow on in artillery formation, and "D" was the reserve company. They were to go over in columns of platoons. Each company had to provide bombers to make sure of the cellars in Thiepval and parties of "moppers-up" to clear the trenches of any stray Huns that might have managed to evade our artillery barrage.

Eleven new officers joined us on or about the 21st, and were posted to companies as follows: Second-Lieutenants C. F. Mayos and J. A. Milligan to "A" Company; Second-Lieutenants H. Oliver, H. Serginson, and T. Robinson to "B" Company; Second-Lieutenants F. H. Worthington and R. H. Smallwood to "C" Company; Second-Lieutenants G. M. Popple, C. F. O. Whickham, H. White, and G. Thornycroft to "D" Company. On the 26th, the Company Commanders were instructed to conduct these officers round the line in order that they might see the position whence we were to make our attack. Our artillery had started the preliminary bombardment, and the officers had anything but a pleasant journey. Captain Dunghinson and his party had a particularly bad time, and on leaving the trenches a shell burst right in the middle of them and killed Second-Lieutenants Popple and Whickham. Captain Dunghinson and Second-Lieutenant

Thornycroft were wounded. Our Lewis Gun Officer, Lieutenant F. A. George, left us on the 26th to be attached to the R.F.C.

The date of the great attack was fixed for June 29th, and on the 27th the battalion moved up to Knight's Redoubt near Bouzincourt in preparation for the day. Here we lived in bivouacs. The next morning orders were received that the attack had been postponed for forty-eight hours, and we were to "Stand Fast." The reason for this was, owing to some very heavy rain, the ground farther north was too water-logged for the attack to be successful.

CHAPTER IX

THE BATTLE OF THE SOMME

TOWARDS the end of June the British gun-fire intensified. Battery after battery had moved up through the appalling mud. Sweating horses were hock-deep; and, after herculean efforts, the guns were in position adding to the pandemonium. Night and day the roar continued. The thousands of eighteen-pounder shells created a terrifying moan, rising and falling with a dismal whine; the howitzers gave a deep bellow, and their hissing shells sounded above the general moan; farther back the monster fifteen-inch guns almost deafened the ear. Nerve-wracking reports all around, the rushing of mighty shells through the air intermingled with the more muffled sounds of the bursting German shells. The heavy clouds were aglow all night with the continuous flashes: the very gun muzzles were a dull red heat. Into this 'inferno' the 16th marched.

On the evening of 30th June, the battalion moved off by platoons from Knight's Redoubt and proceeded to the trenches via Martinsart, Aveluy Wood, and Black Horse Bridge. Movement was slow. The road all the way was crowded with troops, guns, ammunition columns, and regimental transport; for miles the route was just one mass of men, horses, and vehicles. It seemed chaotic; yet all moved forward with one definite aim. Nearer and nearer to the trenches the troops marched: speech was almost an impossibility; the very air vibrated with the perpetual cannonade.

Enemy guns were searching the roads, but the 16th reached the entrance to the communication trench without mishap. Then began the toll of human life. Many casualties occurred before the battalion reached its battle position, where it relieved the 2nd Inniskillings at 2.30 a.m. The front line was not recognisable, so badly damaged was it. Still raged the frightful shell-fire: it was not a case of odd shells, or even of salvos at intervals. The air was thick with flying metal, shrieking fiends of death.

"A" and "B" Companies, who were to lead the attack, took over the front line, "A" (Captain A. C. Young) from Skinner

Street to Hamilton Avenue, and " B " (Captain P. G. Graham) from Hamilton Avenue to Maison Grise Sap. " C " Company (Captain E. Thompson) in support, went into the communication trenches, two platoons in Hamilton Avenue, and two in Gourrock Street. " D " Company, now commanded by Lieutenant Proctor, was in reserve in the second line (Gommel Trench) with Battalion Headquarters.

Zero hour was at 7.30 a.m. on 1st July, and for five hours the battalion stood to, crowded into the trenches. All through the night the enemy fired steadily, and the list of casualties rapidly increased.

The protecting barrage was to be put down at 7.30 a.m. In a war of miracles and mysteries, these screens of bursting shells were unique. An animate curtain, it swayed viciously before the advancing troops and advanced with them over the ground. Where the fringes flicked the earth, it seemed impossible that anything human could live.

Punctual to a second, the barrage fell, as if from the skies. The leading waves scrambled over the top of the parapet: but the impossible had happened. Human beings *had* lived through that awful fire; and, from their machine guns, cunningly concealed in concrete emplacements they poured a murderous leaden stream of bullets into our men. As the barrage moved behind the enemy front line, the Huns stood upon their parapet and invited the men to " Come on," picking them off with accurate rifle fire. So intense was the enemy shooting that our leading waves were forced to lie down. " C " Company which had moved up to the front line, saw this, and attempted to reinforce, but suffered very heavily as soon as the men got over the top. " D " Company and Battalion Headquarters moved up to the front line, and orders were given for " D " Company to advance. The first platoon, under Lieutenant F. H. Worthington, on going over the parapet met the same fate as the leading waves. The remainder of " D " Company was therefore ordered to stand fast, man the fire-steps in the front line and open rapid covering fire on the enemy who were still visible standing or kneeling on their parapet.

Meanwhile the men in front were having a bad time. Many were killed, and those who were too badly wounded to take further part in the battle, crawled and shuffled into shell holes for cover from the deadly fire. " B " Company's Commander, Captain Percy Graham, was killed almost as soon as he got over the top. Captain Young, in command of " A " Company, once got back to report on the situation. On returning, he endeavoured to rally

the few men who were left alive and form a firing line in No Man's Land, but before he could accomplish it, this gallant officer also fell.

Two companies from the 16th Lancashire Fusiliers came up in support at 10 a.m., and half an hour later a message came from Brigade ordering us to hang on where we were, as measures were being taken to turn the north of Thiepval.

All day long the enemy continued to shell heavily our front line and No Man's Land. The dread toll of casualties increased, especially amongst the companies lying out in the open. Orders were received towards evening that the battalion was to withdraw at dusk, relieved by the 16th Lancashire Fusiliers. Darkness hid the horrors of No Man's Land. A company of the 2nd Royal Inniskillings, commanded by Captain Williams, rendered most excellent assistance in carrying back the wounded from No Man's Land. Our own stretcher-bearers performed magnificently.

On that riven, tortured ground between the opposing trenches was written, in human bodies, the epic of Tyneside's heroism and Britain's might. The men of the attacking companies had moved forward in perfect unison until the deadly fire had stayed their progress. Not a man had wavered. After nightfall they were found in straight lines, as if the platoons had been "dressed" for parade. Gloriously they had attacked; gloriously they had made the great sacrifice. The silent lines of majestic dead epitomised the soul of Britain.

Remnants of the battalion, 8 officers and 279 other ranks marched into the Bluff, to the north of Black Horse Bridge at 1.30 in the morning of 2nd July. The 16th Northumberland Fusiliers had been badly broken, but not defeated.

The great attack had taken place: the first day was over, and sadly the losses were totalled. Six gallant officers, Captain P. G. Graham, Captain A. O. Young, Lieutenant T. McIntyre, Lieutenant R. W. Falconer, Second-Lieutenant W. E. Avery, and Second-Lieutenant M. G. Klean, together with over 350 gallant N.C.O.'s and men had laid down their lives for their country. Of the twenty-one officers in action, six were killed and thirteen wounded. The odds had been too strong against us. Two days of respite had given the enemy a chance to bring up fresh troops. It had been our honour to be the first of many battalions to attempt to capture the most strongly fortified position in the German line. Not until September and after many attacks in great strength with the help of tanks did Thiepval fall into British hands, our old friends, the 18th Division, being the captors.

The survivors of that fatal 1st July took what rest they could

in the Bluff during the next day. The attack went on; the guns still roared and boomed; reinforcements passed up in great numbers; and the never-ending chain of wounded passed down to the Clearing Stations. Turmoil and suffering marked those opening days of the great battle. Sorrowfully the little band in the Bluff thought of their comrades who had so recently shared with them the joys and the hardships of campaigning. The "First of July" was a sad day for Tyneside; so many of her best and bravest went then to their noble last sleep.

Where courage was the routine, and heroism an incident, it would be invidious to mention any one particular deed. Any man who took part in the opening attack—and in any battle for that matter—was a hero. Yet a word of praise must be given to Captain W. T. Hare, M.C., R.A.M.C., the Battalion Medical Officer, for the magnificent work he performed. Many men will ever remember with infinite thankfulness and gratitude his untiring energy in alleviating their sufferings. As an example of the heroism displayed the case of Sergeant Weldon was typical. For thirteen hours he was in No Man's Land. At one period he was sniping the enemy; his rifle was shot away; he gained another from a wounded man, and again was his rifle destroyed by enemy fire. In all he accounted for nearly a score of Germans. Crawling from shell-hole to shell-hole he dressed his wounded comrades. At night he returned to the trench, and assisted in bringing in the wounded.

At nightfall the battalion moved across the Marsh to the "C" Assembly Trenches in Aveluy Wood, where, the following day, only 8 officers and 300 other ranks answered the Roll Call. The casualties—killed, wounded, and missing—had amounted to 13 officers and 365 other ranks. A further move was made on 3rd July, via Bouzincourt to Warloy. The weary battalion arrived about 9 o'clock at night, thankful for the prospect of a few days of rest. Rumour was busy, and the hope of a change of scene helped to improve the spirits of all.

All hopes of a rest, however, were soon dispelled when we received orders on 5th July to move to Varennes. A move in that direction tended to confirm the rumour that the battalion was going north. Even that slight hope was shattered: for on the 7th we moved to Hedauville, on the 8th to Senlis, and on the 9th to Bouzincourt. Thus, in a few days, the battalion had marched round the four sides of a square, arriving at the original starting point. Why? The answer is still a mystery. For were we not but one unit in that mighty concourse thronging the muddy area? Were



Photo by]

NO MAN'S LAND, THIEPVAL.
June, 1916.

[Major L. B. Proctor, M. C.

we not just represented on the Staff maps by a tiny flag? A turn of the wrist, and the flag got out of the way of an incoming flag. That turn of the wrist meant another march for us; we marched!

Bivouacs at Bouzincourt were our homes; so the battalion settled in to await orders. The suspense was short, for, on the 11th July, we moved off at 4.30 in the afternoon and proceeded to Ovillers-la-Boisselle, where we took over trenches and posts from the 2nd Battalion Manchester Regiment. For the next two days there was no undue excitement. The artillery on both sides was very active; the noise was almost intolerable; but it is to be hoped that our gunners knew more about their targets than did the Germans. The front line was troubled comparatively little; the areas behind, however, seemed to be receiving considerable attention from the enemy guns. Probably they trusted to their machine guns, cunningly hidden, to hold up the infantry, while the artillery attempted to knock out the British batteries and prevent the massing of fresh troops.

About this time a famous war-correspondent, describing the fighting at Ovillers, gave a graphic account of how the British troops were bombing the enemy from house to house, and from cellar to cellar. It was quite a good account, but highly imaginative; for, be it noted, the only visible sign of what had once been a pretty village consisted of the ruins of a small church tower, which later became notorious as Point 63. Ovillers, even as a skeleton, did not exist: it had been disintegrated.

On the morning of 14th July a gallant attempt was made to advance and to consolidate Points 45 and 63. Enemy machine guns, safe in their concrete emplacements, made movement so extremely difficult that the attack was held up. Second-Lieutenant A. Park was killed whilst leading a party of bombers against one of the machine guns. On our left flank the 17th Battalion Highland Light Infantry and the 2nd Battalion Royal Inniskillings also attacked, gained their objective, but were driven back to their original line. All three battalions were heavily counter-attacked, but eventually the enemy was repulsed, not, unfortunately, without loss of more valuable lives.

At night on 14th July, the battalion was relieved by the 2nd Battalion Manchester Regiment, and moved into billets at Bouzincourt. Next day we marched to Warloy. There the rumour, so persistent prior to 9th July, of a move north, was substantiated at last: the march was to begin on the following day. Major-General Sir W. H. Rycroft, G.O.C. 32nd Division and several of his staff inspected the battalion during the trek to Warloy. He

congratulated Colonel Ritson on the magnificent manner in which the battalion had carried out its onerous duties, and expressed his sorrow at the great number of casualties it had sustained.

In a purely Battalion History the full story of the Battle of the Somme cannot be given. The 16th Northumberland Fusiliers had borne heroically the first shock of the first great battle between nations-in-arms. The result, as never before, carried the war into every home. Tyneside was desolated; England mourned. The apparent gain was a mere strip of blasted land; the loss was the pick of Britain's young manhood. Day followed day, week succeeded week, and that terrible battle continued. The front swayed; we advanced; we were forced back; we advanced again. Every yard cost hundreds of lives: the earth was a shambles. Corpses accumulated faster than the burial parties could clear the battlefield. Pitiful sights; heartrending calamities; bitter struggles; incredible hardships—all these multiplied. At home the dire casualty lists lengthened. Sorrow touched every family. Then arose the wondering cry, torn from the souls of those bereft of their loved ones: "Is it worth the sacrifice?"

Soldiers knew not. They had been through the hell of those bloody assaults: and they, too, had wondered. We know now the serious conditions under which the enemy laboured: but this knowledge was hidden from the battle-scarred veterans of the 16th as they marched from Warloy. The battalion had had its share to do: it had performed nobly. As an integral part of the splendid British Force that went "over the top" on 1st July it had helped to break the *morale* of the German Army. The cost was heavy: the gain was incalculable.

CHAPTER X

BETHUNE—AND RECUPERATION

BEAUVAL was the first stage of the trek north. It is a large village and comfortable. While here we received a draft of seven officers, all of whom were Northumberland Fusiliers. The march was continued on the 17th, and finally, on the 26th July, the battalion reached La Beuvrière. After the long period of trench warfare, such as we had experienced prior to the Battle of the Somme, the continuous change of scenery and the steady exercise proved very beneficial. Fifteen miles of marching per day acted as a tonic: by the time we reached La Beuvrière there was a marked improvement in the appearance of the men.

The battalion was detailed to provide the guards for Corps Headquarters at La Buissière. This, of course, meant "spit and polish." The men for the guards were carefully chosen by the Commanding Officer, and spent the next two days from early morning until late at night in the care of the Adjutant and the R.S.M. So well were they trained in ceremonial drill that the Corps Commander praised their work and complimented the battalion.

On 29th July the remainder of the battalion moved to Houchain: and we came to the end of our long march on 5th August when we arrived at Bethune. Billets were allotted in the Tobacco Factory on the Beuvry Road. This was the first time we had been billeted in a fair-sized French town, and all looked forward to having a good time. Cafés and confectioners' shops were full of tempting things; the estaminets supplied a much more palatable beer than any we had previously sampled in France; and, above all, the place seemed free of Boche shells.

A rude shock awaited us on the night of our arrival. Colonel Ritson suddenly announced that he was leaving for home, and that Major Little was to take command of the battalion. He had raised the 16th, and had commanded it from its birth. The thought of his leaving distressed us all. We knew that he had been ill for some time, but had hoped that the stay in the north

would have helped in his recovery. It was not to be. He left us on the 6th of August. The men disobeyed orders for the first time, determined to show their affection for the Chief who had led them and cared for them so long. As the Colonel left Headquarters they paraded the street, singing "Auld Lang Syne." As a final send-off they gave three hearty cheers, north-countrymen to a north-countryman.

The next day we had another rude shock. On the 6th, a Sunday, an open-air service was held in the Grande Place to commemorate the second anniversary of the outbreak of war. General Sir C. C. Munro, Commanding First Army, the Corps Commander, their Staffs, and all the Divisional Commanders and Brigadiers in the neighbourhood of Bethune, and as many troops as possible were present. Towards the end of the service enemy aeroplanes appeared, but were chased off. The result was the arrival, next morning, of shells of large calibre. It was market day, and the Grande Place was packed with people when the first shell exploded. The square was quickly cleared, but how many people were killed or wounded we never knew. Shells fell at intervals of about five minutes for the rest of the day. One house had the whole front blown away as evenly as if cut by a gigantic knife; others were demolished; every pane of glass was broken in the area. The busy, peaceful market became a scene of desolation. Such is war.

It is an ill wind which blows nobody any good. One of the shells saved us a lot of trouble. We had been ordered to practise the consolidation of craters, but could not find one in the immediate neighbourhood. Word was brought that a shell had fallen in the monastery garden, making an enormous hole, and would we please have it filled in. It was certainly the largest crater we had yet seen and was the very thing we required. Permission to use it for training purposes was granted on the condition that we filled it in before we left the district.

Drafts arrived, and for the next fortnight we were hard at work building up a new battalion on the remains of the old. Company parades were the order of the day, and bayonet fighting, gas-helmet drill, bombing, and consolidation of craters were all practised. The specialists, too, carried out a detailed programme. A good training ground was available on the Beuvry Road (at E. 18d. 40.70, as the Battalion Orders put it!). Every effort was made to get the battalion fit to take its place again in the trenches. When the Divisional Commander, Major-General Sir W. H. Rycroft, visited us on August 10th, he was very pleased with the work done, and the stage of training reached.

On the 12th August and again on the 18th the battalion route-marched, and was inspected on each occasion by the Brigadier. The novelty was introduced of making the men cook their own dinner. Some had a meal and some had not! Such exercises tended to make the troops more appreciative of the company cooks.

A tactical scheme was arranged on the 15th; at 6.30 p.m. the battalion paraded under Captain T. H. Wake, and marched to the rendezvous. The Commanding Officer and the Adjutant were umpires and critics; they had reconnoitred the ground and had discovered many very interesting things. It was rumoured that they had found an estaminet down the road. Perhaps the Adjutant could enlighten us. At any rate, in his conversation next day there were many allusions to sweet champagne. It is still a mystery whether or not the word champagne is spelt with a capital C. Was it a liquid or a district?

The period of "rest" came to an end on the 21st August, and the battalion left its comfortable billets in Bethune and marched via Beuvry and Annequin to the left sub-sector of the Cambrin Sector, taking over from the 2nd K.O.Y.L.I. On the right were "A" and "D" Companies; on the left "B" and "C." Everything was quiet during the first night, but desultory firing with whizz-bangs, 5.9's, and T.M.'s went on all the next day. Very little damage was done to our trenches. Patrols were sent out, but little of importance was discovered. In this sector the whole of the front was mined. This was our second experience of a real mining area, our first being at the "Tambour" in the vicinity of La Boisselle. One of our mines was exploded, and the enemy retaliated by sending over large numbers of rifle-grenades and minnenwerfers. Luckily for us the majority of these projectiles fell in "High Street" and did very little damage. Our casualties were: one killed, seven wounded, and one missing. On the 24th everything was quiet until about 2.30 p.m., when the enemy began to bombard our sap in Boyau 15 and did considerable damage. The bombardment lasted an hour. Our artillery and trench mortars replied.

On the 25th we were relieved by our old friends, the 2nd Inniskilling Fusiliers, and retired to the village line, "B" Company leaving a garrison in Arthur's Keep. Before being relieved, however, we had the misfortune to lose Second-Lieutenant E. H. Dunn and twelve other ranks, who had been manning one of the saps. They were all wounded. It was a Y-shaped sap, and the Hun suddenly strafed it with whizz-bangs and trench-mortars, wiped out the post, and wounded Second-Lieutenant

Dunn who was visiting the sentries. Sergeant Waters won the D.C.M. for his bravery on this occasion. Hearing that one of his men was missing, he, although blinded and dazed, insisted on returning to the sap to find the man. Crawling up the sap, which had been levelled by the enemy fire, he found the missing man wounded, and partly buried in the trench. Sergeant Waters extricated the wounded man, and carried him to safety.

The front line trenches were in such a bad state that every available man was sent up to help to clear them. As fast as they were cleared the enemy blew them in again. When we relieved the 2nd Inniskillings on the 29th, the trenches were in such a deplorable condition that a party of two officers and one hundred men from the 16th Lancashire Fusiliers came up to help to repair them. They worked for five hours, but the combined action of shell-fire and rain prevented them from making much impression. On the 30th the weather was again vile, and portions of the trenches fell in due to the lack of revetting. In places, pumps had to be requisitioned. By unremitting toil we got the trenches into a fairly decent state.

The enemy had developed a habit of shelling Bethune, so a scheme of retaliation was devised. Every time a shell fell in the town, our artillery and trench-mortars shelled a portion of the enemy line. This usually brought a reply, and on 2nd September, though little damage was done to the trenches, five of our men were wounded. During the early part of the month there was nothing of note. Trench routine was followed by "rest"; the demands of our friends, the 206th and the 218th Field Companies R.E., however, always kept us very busy during the spells out of the line. So much so that we were always glad to return to the trenches.

There was always a fair amount of trench-mortar activity. The unwieldy shells came over with a curious uncertainty of movement, and exploded with a peculiar crash. It needed no sensitive ear to detect the harsh rending note of a trench-mortar bomb. Sometimes they did much damage, but generally in our tours at this period we were able to keep the trenches in good condition, and gradually to improve them. Drainage channels were cut, and trench-boards put in position.

On the 18th September the relieving battalion was the 5th/6th Royal Scots, who had replaced, as one of the battalions of the 14th Infantry Brigade, the 19th Lancashire Fusiliers. The latter had gone to the Base to be trained as a Pioneer Battalion. Upon relief, the 16th Northumberland Fusiliers proceeded to



Photo by]

CHURCH PARADE, BETHUNE.
6th August, 1916.

[Capt. W. T. Richardson.



Photo by]

BETHUNE, 1919.

[Alfred Brewis.

Beuvry, where comfortable quarters were available. The town had suffered little damage, and the inhabitants remained. Gas attacks were imminent, and the troops received constant practice in respirator drill. A fine competition was held at Annezin (25th September). Teams of twenty-five from each battalion gave a demonstration of crossing a crater. A very interesting show it was, our own team under Lieutenant King performing well.

The next day, the battalion left Beuvry, and occupied the support line in the Cuinchy Sector, taking over from the 2nd K.O.Y.L.I. We manned the keeps, and, as the weather was fine, a tremendous amount of work was done in cutting new trenches and repairing old ones. Working and carrying parties were provided for the Royal Engineers and Trench-Mortar Batteries. During the afternoon of the 30th we relieved the 2nd Battalion R.I.F., in the right Cuinchy sub-sector, "A," "D" and "B" Companies being in position from right to left, with "C" in support. Trench-mortar fire was opened on 2nd October, in co-operation with the 8th Division. At the same hours on the 3rd the programme was continued and the enemy retaliation did considerable damage.

There was a sameness about our existence. A tour of duty in the line; trench-mortar activity; a spell in reserve, and the provision of working parties wherever we were. Sometimes we had to march five or six miles to work; we heard of favoured parties who had motor lorries provided to carry them to and from work. No luck of that kind attended us. When we got back we were usually too tired to bother about exploring the countryside, and glad enough to rest on the canal bank, or stay in billets.

Rumour was again busy. It seemed that the 16th was destined for another tour of duty in the Somme operations. How news got abroad was often a mystery; but, for a while after this rumour occupied our minds, the old routine went on. We relieved the 2nd R.I.F. (8th October) in the Cuinchy Sub-sector; two days later the 1st East Surrey Regiment and 2nd K.O.Y.L.I. took over from us, and we proceeded to Bethune, for training. On the 13th a draft of 249 o.r. arrived, and the succeeding days were spent in company training. Thus ended the period of comparative calm after the storm of the Somme battle. It may seem a queer method of recuperation, yet it was very effective, if uncomfortable. The 16th was ready again for violent fighting.

CHAPTER XI

THE RETURN TO THE SOMME

THE march south began on the 15th October, the first night being spent at Diéval. Fréwillers was the next halt, and about 2 p.m. on 17th we reached Gouy-en-Ternois. The following day the march continued to Amplier, where we took over some huts, and proceeded next morning to Terramesnil. Something went wrong with the arrangements there, as we had to retrace our steps on the 20th and reoccupy the huts at Amplier. Matters were quickly put straight, and we proceeded to Harponville, staying there two days. On 23rd October, we found ourselves again in the neighbourhood of Albert, having marched via Vadencourt, Warloy, Henencourt, and Millencourt. We had hoped to meet the 6th Battalion of the Regiment at Henencourt, but they had, much to our regret, left an hour before we arrived.

The main road from Warloy was crowded with lorries, guns, G.S. wagons, ambulances and troops. Suddenly out of the mass appeared the well-known smile of Major G. A. Renwick, who was on his way back from the line with the South Wales Borderers. He rode back with us for some distance and gave us the latest news of friends, and of the position on the Somme.

Our destination lay in the Brickfields through the town of Albert. We were under canvas; the rain fell in torrents, and the Brickfields were ankle-deep in mud. Never were we in such miserable surroundings. To add to the discomfort there was not enough tentage, and many of the men had to construct bivouacs. This was towards the end of October: the conditions may well be left to the imagination. Yet this situation was a minor incident of campaigning: the little flag had been stuck again in the Staff maps, and we were stuck in the mud.

All officers commanding units received orders to visit the line between Mouquet Farm and Courcelette to study the ground with a view to making an attack on Pys, and through to Achiet-le-Petit. Next day the officers, guided by the Brigade-Major, paid the area a visit and returned soaked to the skin. Those who went up had

cursed their fate at having to go in such dreadful weather. What was the good of it? Did they not know every inch of it? Had they not gazed for seven weary months on its appalling desolation? What else was there to see in this hell-upon-earth?

The Higher Command knew better! Since that first creeping barrage in July, the shell-storms had not ceased. Attack had followed attack: little by little, and with terrible slaughter, the line had advanced. Enemy soldiers feared the Somme, and called it "the blood-bath." Their letters were eloquent of its horrors. Resistance had been powerful; the British attacks had gradually won through. Four months of artillery fire had changed the scene; those who went to reconnoitre were completely lost. Mouquet Farm with its apple trees; Fricourt and its woods; Courcellette and other villages were as completely obliterated as if they had never existed. The party simply gaped in astonishment at the awful, incredible desolation. Landmarks were gone; maps were almost useless; the only guide was the contour of the muddy country.

The proposed advance was postponed. Again had the weather aided the enemy. The whole of the countryside was one vast sea of tenacious mud. Men could not traverse that treacherous ground. Not a square yard but had been blown up by a shell. The holes, some of them several feet deep, were full of filthy, ice-cold water. It was too much to expect men to advance over such terrain.

Orders arrived on 26th October to move to Warloy via Bouzincourt and Senlis. With infinite relief we said "Good-bye" to the Brickfields, and returned to the village of happy memories. Even Warloy had changed since we left it in July, but one peaceful spot remained the same—"La Ruche," where the landlady still supplied the best French wines. Germaine was delighted to see us again, and gave us news of lots of our friends of other battalions. Lieutenant George, who had left us in June to join the Air Force, came over from an aerodrome close by to see us, and to ask about our adventures.

Warloy was a place of memories. Thoughts flew back to that day at the end of June when all the officers who had been with the battalion since its formation met before proceeding to the trenches and wished each other good luck. Of all who had foregathered in that room only four remained with the battalion. Of the men, not three hundred remained. Tongues were stilled; poignant memories crowded out the present: all eyes shone with a strange gleam. . . .

For weeks scores of letters had been pouring into the Orderly Room from men who had been wounded, and, on recovery, had been drafted to other regiments. They implored us to get them back. Many applications were forwarded to the Higher Authorities, but the only reply was that it was impossible to send men back to their own regiments. This reply was incomprehensible; for the indiscriminate drafting of men to other units struck at the very foundations of *morale*. Every man was a better soldier amongst chums in his own battalion. Finally, the Higher Authorities recognised this, and attempted to send men back, if not to their original unit, then to their original regiment. It was something gained.

We remained at Warloy for the next five days, putting in as much training as the rain permitted; on the 31st we proceeded to Hérissart, via Vadencourt and Contay. Next morning, in spite of the persistent rainfall, we managed to get in a Brigade tactical exercise. After another Brigade exercise (4th November), General Rycroft, G.O.C. 32nd Division, held a "pow-wow," and, amongst other things, insisted on officers being dressed the same as the men, so as to offer a less obvious target for snipers.

Afternoons were devoted to sports and amusements. We were lucky enough to have two large barns side by side. A little practical exercise in demolition provided us with *one* decent-sized concert hall. The battalion, despite its vicissitudes, never lacked musical talent, and enjoyable programmes helped to make our stay very cheery. We look back on these side-lines of war with contentment. They were oases in the Desert of Mudlarking.

On 13th November we returned to our old billets at Warloy, and proceeded next morning, via Bouzincourt, Aveluy, Crucifix Corner, to the line. Guides from the 16th Rifle Brigade conducted us to the line. "B" Company occupied Schwaben Redoubt, and the remainder of the battalion took up quarters in the old Boche front line. This, after over four months of fighting! The original scheme for an attack on Pys, Irles, Achiet-le-Petit and Achiet-le-Grand had been abandoned, and we were now in support of the 19th Division. The remainder of the 32nd Division had moved farther north to the neighbourhood of Beaumont-Hamel, where an attack was made from the Wagon Road. It was impossible to make progress because of the mud. When a portion of ground was taken it could not be held; the men could not dig themselves in.

We remained with the 19th Division until the 17th November.

Nothing of importance occurred during the stay in Schwaben Redoubt. There was considerable artillery activity; and tear-gas shells caused some inconvenience. The greatest trouble, however, was mud. Men in the Redoubt were waist-deep in it; they had no overhead cover of any sort, but made no murmur. The most the C.O. heard when he made his round was, "Everything all right, sir; but oh! this bloody mud." Bloody it was. There was hardly a shell-hole where the water was not blood-stained. Under these conditions men lived—and died.

The most painful task awaited us, that of burying our own dead, those who fell on the 1st of July. Parties were sent out from the companies in support to cover all the ground in front of Thiepval, to identify, if possible, all the bodies still lying there and bury them. Such duties demand courage. When war has passed on, the wreckage it leaves behind strikes horror into the least sensitive of men. Mercifully draw a veil over the search: those who have seen will never forget; those who have not seen will never realise.

Taking up a position in the machine-gun emplacements in Thiepval, we were able to reconstruct the dread events of the 1st July. When we saw the bodies of our comrades, hanging there in what was left of the enemy's barbed wire, it was with a feeling of pride. How, except by invincible courage, had they got so far forward against that storm of bullets? The sunken road had been enfiladed by two machine guns, and hundreds of bodies lay there, our own men side by side with men of the Lancashire Fusiliers. The enemy fire had been deadly: the attackers never had a chance. No matter where the fault lay, we always knew that the men were not to blame. There they lay, a silent testimony to the fact that they had never faltered. Death alone had stopped them. We knew of the hidden machine guns; we knew of the Boche lining the parapets after the barrage had passed; we knew, too, that our Gunners had seen this but had not the authority to train a single gun to deal with the unforeseen situation. The plans had miscarried; but the men had not failed. We marched away with heads proudly erect, leaving our comrades to sleep where they had so nobly died.

We were withdrawn from Schwaben Redoubt on the 17th November, and marched to Mailly-Maillet to rejoin the Brigade, which was in divisional support. Next morning, the battalion stood to owing to an enemy attack; but, as the affair was soon over, we returned to billets. On the 19th, we became Divisional Reserve, at Ellis Square, and were attached to the 14th Brigade.

The battalions in the line were being hard pressed and had suffered many casualties. "A" and "D" Companies were sent into the line to support the 1st Dorsets; and, on 20th, "B" and "C" relieved the 15th Battalion H.L.I., which had suffered heavily. "B" Company (Captain W. Lunn) was on the right, "C" (Captain W. Smith) on the left. Artillery fire on both sides was very active. The trenches were in a deplorable state owing to the sticky mud. Communication with the K.O.Y.L.I. on the left, and with the 1st Dorsets on the right was established with great difficulty. The trenches were much damaged, but it was impossible to improve them satisfactorily, as the clay would not leave the shovels. "A" and "D" took over from the 1st Dorsets and so extended our line.

Orders were received on 23rd November from G.O.C. 14th Brigade to capture Point 88 and the trench running from it to Point 17. Owing to the depth and tenacity of the mud we considered that the only possible chance of success was by a surprise attack without any artillery preparation. The Higher Authorities decided otherwise. There was no artillery barrage, the guns firing on their "night lines." The expected happened. Parties bombing up the trench from the enemy's right and left, and the party making the frontal attack were stuck in the mud. Rifles and Lewis guns were choked; and the men were plastered from head to feet. It took them an hour to cover fifty yards, and when they arrived in the enemy's trench they were so exhausted that most of them had no strength left to use their bayonets. To add to the miseries of that glue-like mud, our artillery was firing short. Most of our casualties were caused by these "shorts." Men attempted to dig each other out, and were an easy mark for the enemy. It was a horrible night.

While occupying the trenches in front of Serre we found the most perfect Boche emplacement we had yet seen. His "oil-cans" had troubled us sorely; and the source of the trouble was exposed. There were three sizes of this mortar, the largest being 3 feet 6 inches in length and 1 foot 6 inches in diameter. The barrel was made of wood, closely bound round with wire. In the oval base was placed a slab of gun-cotton, the range being regulated by the size of the charge. A wire ran from the base to a central dug-out; the mortar-man had merely to press a button and the damage was done—to our trenches. In this one large dug-out there were numerous emplacements; one contained two of the large mortars; two contained six medium tubes; three held the smallest size; and there were two sections devoted to aerial darts

and similar minor examples of the devil's art. Two large dug-outs were used as ammunition stores; in addition there was an armoury where the garrison stacked rifles and bayonets, many of the latter being of the infamous saw-toothed type. With such fiendish arrangements was it any wonder that Serre was a hard nut to crack?

On the 24th November we were relieved by the 2nd Battalion Gordon Highlanders, one of the finest battalions we met in France. At about 7 a.m. we reached Mailly-Maillet, and in the afternoon marched on to Raincheval, staying there the night; thence, next day to Amplier.

While the battalion had been attached to the 19th Division in Schwaben Redoubt, our Brigadier had left the Brigade. This sad news greeted us when we rejoined the 32nd Division. We were dismayed: we had lost a great leader who was the idol of all ranks. Not a man served under him but would have followed him anywhere. He was a strict disciplinarian; the Brigade owed everything to him since the Codford days. Loving his Regiment as he did, he expected the 16th Battalion of His Majesty's 5th Foot to live up to the high standard. More, he helped us in every way to be a worthy unit of the glorious "Fighting Fifth."

Did the C.O., the youngest subaltern, or the most recently promoted N.C.O. require advice, General Yatman was always ready to give it. He encouraged us to ask for it. He knew more about the trenches than we did. Each day he was in them, questioning here, advising there. Woe unto the man who did not know "the why and the wherefore" of each thing done. The General expected a ready answer. If you were right, a word of commendation: if wrong, a terse correction. After he had passed, each one felt himself to be a better soldier, more fitted for the colossal task ahead.

A General, yes; but always was he a Fusilier.

"Well, my man, what do you belong to?"

"16th Northumberlands, sir."

"What?"

"16th Northumberlands, sir."

"WHAT?"

"16th Northumberland Fusiliers, sir."

"That's better. Good morning!"

No one paid more attention than he did to that vital point of soldiering—the welfare of the men. In the Brigade, most men knew some portions of the results of the General's foresight and

consideration. He did more than strafe in the line. Yes, he *could* strafe: but it was always justified: there was no damning as a matter of routine. The greatest testimonial possible was given by the men of our battalion. A deputation waited upon the C.O. and asked him to convey to General Yatman their sincere regrets at his departure.



Photo by]

LIEUT.-COL. A. W. LITTLE.

[Jas. Bacon & Sons.

CHAPTER XII

BONNEVILLE—AND REST

A *real* rest was promised, not the trench-warfare, working-party sort of the Bethune days. On the 26th November the battalion marched via Beauval and Valheureux to Bonneville. The next two days were spent in getting rid of the mud, and in smartening up. We certainly needed it. Bathing, which had been an impossibility near the line, was still a difficulty. The nearest baths were at Domart, seven miles away: and motor lorries were scarce. After the first visit our ever-resourceful Quartermaster, Lieutenant Richardson, decided to improvise baths in Bonneville. He discovered a large kitchen with a copper; he saved up all the bacon boxes and "found" a few; he lined them with tin from the tea-boxes, and finished them off with a lining of waterproof sheets. They made excellent bath-tubs; and for his ingenuity Lieutenant Richardson received warm praise not only from the Divisional and Brigade Commanders, but from the men who could have a bath without trudging all the way to Domart.

Thanks to the great generosity of the Newcastle Chamber of Commerce and the Ladies' Committee, the Q.M. had been able to accumulate a complete change of underclothing for the men of one company. He established a wash-house in the village, and so was able to keep up a regular supply of clean clothing. It is impossible adequately to thank the Chamber of Commerce and all the ladies who worked so hard for us all through the war. By their goodness we were able to have 400 or 500 pairs of clean, dry socks sent nightly up to the trenches, and our Q.M. had always a sufficient supply of shirts to give the men a change when they came out. We can never thank them enough, not only for the clothes, but for the roses on St George's Day, and for the excellent Christmas dinners. The cheers of the men on each occasion when they heard of the kindness of our "raisers" were ample proof of their gratitude.

Having got rid of the mud of the trenches, we began to get back to our original degree of smartness. There was an excellent training ground on the outskirts of the village, but as usual, no

appliances existed. It was a strange fact that although every village we stayed in had been used by troops for nearly two years yet we always had to make our own trenches, rifle-ranges, etc., before training could begin. So it was in this case. Every man had to be put on to this work of preparation, and this wasted, in a way, a good part of our rest period. The grooms, however, had a good time. They discovered that there were wild boar in the woods, and they had many a glorious chase in the early morning. Our new G.O.C., Brigadier-General Ashburner, M.V.O., D.S.O., inspected us on 4th December. Two days later the G.O.C. 5th Corps, together with our new Divisional Commander, Major-General Barnes, paid us a visit. The whole Brigade was drawn up in close column of companies in line, Lewis-gun hand-carts and transport in rear. After being inspected, the battalions marched past.

There were several changes in personnel. On the 9th December, Major L. Permain joined us from the 86th Training Reserve at Hornsea. Three days later, our Adjutant, Captain R. H. Worthington, M.C., relinquished his duties and departed to Headquarters, 32nd Division. Captain "Tommy" Wake took over from him. On the 18th December Lieutenants Peyton and Worthington arrived for duty; two days after this we lost another old original, Captain W. Lunn, who went to Headquarters, 14th Brigade, for instruction in Staff duties.

Training continued; and, although we were miles and miles behind the trenches we still had to find large working parties. This interfered greatly with our progress. Sports and recreation received their share of attention. The piano, which always travelled with us, disguised as a roll of blankets, came into its own again. What shouts of glee greeted the opening of the first concert at Bonneville when Captain "Billie" Lunn sang "Blaydon Races"! In the Divisional cross-country run on the 24th—a splendid appetiser—we managed to secure third place. Each day a lorry took men to Amiens to have a look round.

The Quartermaster, ably assisted by the Padre, had been busy for some time scouring the countryside as far as Amiens—a powerful magnet was Amiens!—to buy pork, turkeys, apples, oranges, nuts, beer and other luxuries for the Christmas dinner. The Chamber of Commerce had sent a cheque to provide good things and everybody had a really merry Christmas. Old friends, both officers and men, who had left us for other units, arrived to spend the day with us. When the C.O. informed everybody of the kindness of the Committee at home, hearty cheers rang out.

The officers had decided to dine together at 7 p.m. in a large

room at Headquarters. The Mess-Corporal had got the room prettily decorated with mistletoe, evergreens, etc., and when he brought in the large cake which Mrs Ritson had so kindly sent us, about forty officers joined in singing: "For she's a jolly good fellow." The charming daughter of the house performed the ceremony of cutting the cake. Meanwhile "Ralph," with the assistance of some good liqueur brandy, exercised all his diplomacy to pacify her father while we carried out the remainder of the old customs! However, it all ended well. We had a right royal night. Our visitors, in the early hours, mounted their horses, and the horses did the rest.

The arrival of drafts always occasioned remark. Two old cronies met, and the following conversation was overheard:

"I say, chum, have you seen our new platoon officer?"

"What! Have you lost him already?"

During the following week, the battalion completed its shooting on the Divisional range, and began to organise under the new scheme. Each platoon was to be a complete unit, with its Lewis gunners, bombers, etc., every man having his own particular job. It was a good scheme, if time had permitted of adequate training in it. But, on 5th January, billeting parties were sent off, and the next day we said farewell to the good people of Bonneville. Our stay there had given us a much-needed rest; with many regrets we marched to Sarton, ready for the great events of 1917.

CHAPTER XIII

BEAUMONT HAMEL

THE march continued on 7th January, "A" and "C" Companies to Bus and "B" and "D" to Couin. For the next three days, "B" and "D" provided working parties at Colincamps and Beaussart, and "C" a guard over the prisoners at Bus. The remainder worked keenly on the new platoon organisation. Officers reconnoitred the new line in front of Serre, and, on the 14th, the whole battalion took over, "A" and "C" holding the front line, which consisted of posts, "B" and "D" Companies in support. Everything was extremely quiet, and, during the first tour of duty, there was practically no artillery fire.

We were relieved by the 16th Lancashire Fusiliers two days later, and went into Brigade Reserve at Courcelles, where we lived in huts. During the two days there parties used the baths at Bus. On the 19th the battalion moved again into the trenches, relieving the 5th/6th Royal Scots, and the 2nd Manchester Regiment. "B," "C" and "D" Companies were in the line holding the posts, with "A" Company in reserve. The weather became extremely cold, and the men felt it very much. Movement, however, was easier, as the ground was frozen. Patrols were busy each night and did excellent work. Propaganda papers were left in the German dug-outs, and all their posts on the battalion front were accurately located. This "spotting" of posts was of particular importance in view of the proposed operations.

The cold was still intense; the ground was icebound. After days of routine we were relieved by the 15th Lancashire Fusiliers on 28th January, and went into billets at Mailly-Maillet. There were still enough houses standing to provide good accommodation; but the battalion was short of fuel. The Town Major came to the rescue, and gave us permission to obtain wood from some ruined houses. This added to the comfort, and the next days were spent in digging a cable trench at Beaumont Hamel.

Signs were plentiful that an advance was being prepared. Rumour had it that the Naval Division on the right, between

Beaumont Hamel and the Ancre, was about to attack, and that the 32nd Division had to conform. The battalion was attached (2nd February) to the 97th Infantry Brigade. "B" and "C" Companies and Headquarters marched to the line in front of Beaumont Hamel and relieved the 2nd K.O.Y.L.I. Headquarters were established in Walker Quarry, Wagon Road, in an excellent dug-out, capable of holding a couple of hundred men. "C" Company was in dug-outs in Beaumont Hamel; "B" Company held the front line which consisted of a series of posts established on the ridge. These posts rejoiced in the names Axle, Hell, Hub, Wheel and Peach; but how they were christened we were never able to discover. "A" and "D" Companies remained in reserve at Mailly-Maillet, but were brought up to Beaumont Hamel the next day.

Peach Post was heavily shelled during the first night, and on the 3rd February all the posts and Wagon Road received several shell-storms. "C" Company relieved "B" in the front line and their patrols succeeded in locating the enemy amongst the trees in Ten Tree Alley. On the 4th, the posts were again heavily bombarded, and Peach Post had to be temporarily evacuated. When it was re-occupied, parts of it were so badly damaged that it was decided to establish another post a little to the right, and slightly in front. Later in the day Wagon Road was again heavily shelled.

During the night "B" Company relieved "C." There was only one small dug-out in the line. The men were in shell-holes, and were lucky if they had a piece of corrugated iron as cover. Frost still held the ground in its hard grip. No water was to be had in the line; all supplies had to be brought up in petrol tins from Mailly-Maillet, a long and tedious job. There was an epidemic of dysentery at the time, ascribed to the practice of drinking water from shell-holes. This fact was brought to the notice of all ranks, with the result that the battalion escaped with only a few cases. So scant was the supply of water, that the water from shell-holes was used for shaving and ablution purposes.

The trying conditions made it imperative to relieve daily the company in the line. During the night of the 5th, "D" Company took over the front line, "A" moving into the Headquarters dug-out in Walker Quarry, while "B" and "C" went into reserve in the cellars at Beaumont Hamel. These cellars, with the rubble on top, were all that remained of the once prosperous, prettily situated village. The tall trees which had surrounded the place were now mere riven stumps a few feet high. While

here we received definite information that an attack was to be made by the 97th Brigade, and that one company of the 16th Battalion had to be detailed to guard their left flank. The company detailed was "A," and was sent back to Mailly-Maillet, under Lieutenant Tanner, to train.

Our patrols were in constant touch with the enemy in his front line, but never encountered any of the Hun patrols. It was clear that the enemy knew, or suspected, that something was being prepared for him, for he shelled us heavily day and night. Wagon Road was the sole "feeder" for our sector, and it received frequent shell storms, thus making communication with the front line very difficult.

The daily reliefs continued, "B" having a number of casualties on being relieved on the 9th February. All preparations for the attack were completed. About 4.30 p.m. on the 10th, "A" Company arrived at Headquarters. The tape from Axle to Mango Post on our right was put down, and at 7 p.m. "A" Company moved to its position, reporting all ready at 8 p.m. The barrage fell at 8.30 p.m., and the company moved forward to its objective in Ten Tree Alley. There was little opposition, and the company reported the capture at 9.5 p.m. Five posts were established along the front, but, unfortunately, touch with the 2nd K.O.Y.L.I. on the right could not be established. In consequence, Lieutenant Baird, with a strong party from Hub Post, was sent forward to get into touch with the right. They succeeded about 4.40 a.m. on the 11th, but found the 2nd K.O.Y.L.I. to be some distance to the rear and to the right of their objective. A sixth post was therefore established behind the trees in Ten Tree Alley. Here, the enemy's line was so thickly wired that it could not be penetrated.

All telephone wires had been cut by shells, and the enemy's protective barrage on the ridge made communication almost impossible. Our signallers and messengers displayed magnificent courage. They went forward to the objective with the company unrolling their lines as they went. Within five minutes of the capture of the objective they had informed Headquarters of the fact. Their line was broken innumerable times, but they went out immediately under heavy fire and repaired the damage. Messengers traversed that shell-swept zone; many were hit, but others took the place of the fallen, and with great gallantry kept communication with Headquarters.

About 8 a.m. Brigade Headquarters asked for a report on the situation. Captain Lindsay went forward to make a reconnais-

sance, accomplished this difficult and dangerous task, and his report enabled Brigade Headquarters to get the artillery to concentrate on the portion of the line which had proved a stumbling block. There was a gap in the line, and the enemy had taken advantage of this to pour his supports into this portion of the trench and launch counter-attacks right and left. "A" Company successfully broke one of these counter-attacks, inflicting a number of casualties on the enemy.

For their gallantry in these operations both Captain Lindsay and Lieutenant Baird were awarded the Military Cross.

On the 12th February, "A" Company was relieved by "B" and took over Hub Post from "C," which returned to Walker Quarry, while "D" went into dug-outs in Wagon Road. These dispositions continued until the 13th, when the 17th H.L.I. attacked the strong point in Ten Tree Alley. This attack was preceded by a trench mortar bombardment of the objective; but the attackers were unsuccessful. The artillery took up the bombardment and shelled the front line all day. Enemy retaliation caused many casualties in "B" Company. Until then, casualties had been surprisingly slight: an additional cause of losses were the British shells which fell short of the objective. About midday, Captain Smith was wounded, and Second-Lieutenant King was sent to take command of "B." A strong reinforcing party from "A" went with him; and "C" sent forward a party to reinforce "A" in Hub Post. Our Lewis-gunners got a good target in the communication trench which the enemy had to use. A continuous and effective fire was kept on the German reinforcing troops.

The battalion had now been in line twelve days, under heavy fire for practically the whole time. Orders had been received for the Division to move south, and, as our Brigade was due to move the next day, we were relieved in the line by the 2nd/6th Battalion West York Regiment which had just come out from England and had never been in the line before. We did not envy them their task. Difficult it was for seasoned troops, but for those who had no experience of trench-work it must have been a dreadful baptism. They were fine men, and doubtless gave an excellent account of themselves in a very trying position.

We returned to billets at Mailly-Maillet and Bertrancourt so completely exhausted that many men could barely finish the journey. The next day, however (14th February), when the battalion marched to Lealvillers, not a man fell out. A good sleep had restored to the troops their efficiency. These rapid

recuperations were ample testimony to the wonderful condition of the 16th Battalion.

The following order was published subsequent to the attack on Ten Tree Alley :

“ The G.O.C. 97th Infantry Brigade wishes to thank all ranks for their good work during the operations which have just taken place. Though the weather conditions, and the ground over which the troops moved were very difficult, the cheerfulness and energy of the troops were most marked. The success of the Brigade in the attack was greatly due to the efficiency of the artillery barrage, and reports from officers all go to show what great help the gunners gave and how much the troops appreciated it. The G.O.C. also appreciates how well the troops bore in mind the maxim, ‘ Tread close on the heels of the barrage.’

“ This last success augurs well for the future.

“ The help afforded by the 96th Infantry Brigade was of great value, and the excellent fighting qualities of the 16th Northumberland Fusiliers kept the left flank secure throughout the operations.

“ R. C. CHICHESTER-CONSTABLE, *Captain*,

“ Brigade-Major, 97th Infantry Brigade.

“ 15th February, 1917.”



" THE FUSILIER."

From a drawing by **LIEUT. A. K. LAWRENCE**, 19th Battalion.

CHAPTER XIV

THE GERMAN RETREAT

THE rumour had already reached us that we were going south, probably to take over from the French. This prospect delighted everyone, and conversations were mainly about quiet sectors and the pleasures of new areas. *Morale* rose; and the troops bustled up with polishing for the march, which began on 16th February. The first day of the trek was sunny, and the Somme landscape looked charming. We were facing the best way to appreciate it! Contay, of pleasant and sad memories, with its wealth of good billets, sheltered us the first night. Thence we passed into the Fourth Army Area and reached Villers-Bocage, where we remained for two days, making up deficiencies in kit and equipment. The next day we reached Camon, a pleasant suburb of Amiens. There was poor accommodation for the men, who were overcrowded. This discomfort was somewhat counteracted by the liberal issue of passes to Amiens.

From Camon, our way lay through villages on or just off the Amiens-Roye Road, to Beaufort. Two days were spent at Berteaucourt, where a draft of 100 men arrived late at night, having marched from Corbie, near Albert. Leaving Berteaucourt, we reached Fresnoy, and from there into Brigade reserve at Beaufort, and were held under one hour's notice to move.

The march was extremely pleasant and, as all treks, had an invigorating effect on the battalion. Besides, there was the added stimulus of moving into an area that to the British Army was virgin soil, where the people still talked French and—which was most flattering—took a keen interest in our arrival. Moreover, the rumour went that down there on the Roye road, the right of our Divisional Sector, war was peace or at least peaceable.

Beaufort was considerably damaged. It lay only just south of the area over which the French had been fighting during the Somme Battle of 1916, but the damage that it had suffered had been done earlier in the war, when the château had apparently been a source of great irritation to German gunners.

On 26th February two companies moved up to Warvillers to dug-outs, and a few gas shells were sent over to welcome them. The remainder of the battalion moved to the same dug-outs next day, and at nightfall moved to the line, to take over from the 16th Lancashire Fusiliers. All companies were in the front line, as the front allotted to the battalion was very extended. Second-Lieutenant Armitage and C.S.M. Hebson were wounded by a gas shell that burst near them as "D" Company was moving up the Warvillers-Rouvroy Road to the trenches, but no other casualties were suffered.

The sector taken over was very quiet, but the trenches, particularly the forward trenches, were in a disgusting state, unrevetted and without duck-boards, so that we had to fight a way through about 18 inches of sticky mud, or, more accurately, one would have had to but for the fact that all moving was done over the top by night. This state of the trenches was probably due to the French scheme of defence, which ordered the evacuation of the front line posts even in the event of a raid. As in our Brigade the scheme of defence was diametrically opposed to this, the battalion was kept extremely busy repairing posts and communication trenches throughout its tour of duty.

On 1st March we were relieved and returned to Beaufort, where a week was spent in the ordinary routine work of inspection and drills, platoon and company drill, gas drill, physical drill, bayonet fighting and methods of attack. We were also reinforced by a draft of 135 men, including one or two who had left us, wounded either at Thiepval or Ovillers-la-Boisselle in July of the preceding year.

On the 8th we relieved 15th H.L.I., who had been in close support at Le Quesnoy. It was here that Lieutenant-Colonel Scully, M.C. (Manchester Regiment), took command of the battalion, vice Lieutenant-Colonel Little, who had gone to hospital a week before. We remained at Le Quesnoy for three nights, and on the fourth relieved the 2nd Royal Inniskilling Fusiliers, on the extreme right of the Divisional Sector, being in touch with the French on our right. The connecting point was the Amiens-Roye Road, which was, of course, a contravention of F.S. Regulations. However, the road was certainly not unguarded, for six stout Englishmen and six unconquerable Poilus stood there spoiling for battle night and day.

After four days we were in turn relieved by the 2nd Royal Inniskilling Fusiliers, and on the 16th, while in dug-outs at



Photo by]

LIEUT.-COL. A. J. SCULLY, M.C.

[J. Weston & Son.

Bouchoir, we were ordered to hold ourselves in readiness to support a French attack south of the Amiens-Roye Road and to form a defensive left flank for them. Most of the night was employed in drawing bombs and other additional battle gear, and at 9 a.m. (17th March) we moved out of Bouchoir to take up our position along the Roye Road, which extended from the old front line to the cross road south-east of La Ruthie. The French attack, however, had met with no opposition, and while the battalion was getting into position only four German shells burst, and none of them was within 800 yards of any troops operating.

At noon we moved our position forward to a line roughly running along the old German support line, and at 5 p.m. the 16th Lancashire Fusiliers passed through us, while we were withdrawn to Brigade support in the old English front line. The dug-outs in the German system were not used because of the probability of traps.

This was the beginning of the German retreat to St Quentin and the vaunted Hindenburg line. Cleverly enough he had withdrawn his stores and his troops, leaving behind him a track of desolation. With Hunnish ingenuity he had left many traps for the eager and the unwary. Following him was a task demanding much care. At 9 a.m. on the following morning we again crossed the German line, moved through Parvillers, and took up a reserve position east of the village. The march was continued at 4 p.m., and the battalion reached the line Sept Fours—Etalon, where an old German line was consolidated and occupied for the night. Next day Nesle was entered, and an enthusiastic reception was given by the inhabitants to the company that actually passed through the town.

The battalion did not check its advance—even to consolidate one of the positions that we prepared about four times a day—until the Canal du Nord was reached, with Quiquer on the right of the battalion front. Here the cup of woe brimmed for one officer. His company was on outpost duty and was, of course, posted in masterly fashion. But the Brigadier found occasion to visit groups at a time when one of the sentry groups, having seen neither enemy nor water for nearly a week, also found occasion to wash. The Brigadier was displeased, the Colonel was displeased, and the O.C. Company, after an interview with the C.O., was sad at the malign spirit that seemed to be abroad among the higher commanders. However, at 6 p.m., when a series of defacements had been scored in the fair face of the land by the soldiers, a more modern Wellington gave yet another of his series

of magic words that the whole line would advance, and accordingly we moved to Voyennes and Offoy, on the Somme Canal. All the bridges had been blown up by the retiring German Forces. More civilians were found at Voyennes, and their enthusiastic shouts of welcome ("Vive l'armée anglaise!") and liberal offers of bread, although they were themselves near starvation, made us feel noble liberators of the oppressed and stalwart and efficient soldiers, in spite of anything a Brigadier might say about washing on out-post duty.

The night of our entry into Voyennes was bitterly cold, with driving sleet, and as we lay on the canal bank waiting for rosy-fingered dawn to show, we thought, from the bitterness of the wind, that it was the North Sea and not the Canal de la Somme that we were defending. During the night Lieutenant King crossed the canal with a patrol in full marching kit, by means of the débris of one of the ruined bridges. It seems a small thing now, but those who know the state of the ruined bridges and the darkness of the night will not so underrate it. Be that as it may, Lieutenant King and his party entered the western portion of Offoy, expecting to find here at least a few parties of Germans left to bar the crossings of the canal, and as he crept through the village, which was all darkness and silence, he expected every moment to collide with a hostile post or patrol. Still nothing had happened when he saw a glimmer of light at a window. He at once made for the house, picketed every possible exit, and then, followed by a band of men with fixed bayonets, he burst down the door and rushed in, revolver in hand—to receive a smiling welcome from the village harlot! From her and from other civilians we gleaned that the last Germans had left Offoy, as they had Nesle, four hours—or was it six?—before British troops entered.

At Offoy the advance halted, because, it was said, the General Staff did not wish the guns to run away from their ammunition columns. It was, of course, a much more arduous task to take heavy stores forward over country so devastated as this evacuated area than to throw forward columns of Infantry and Field Artillery, but a surprise counter-attack could easily have broken down the resistance of troops so far forward as to be out of comparatively easy communication with their Base. Whether the General Staff thought so or not, that is what we were taught to believe at the time, and we remained in Offoy, which was very comfortable—except for one company, which was lodged round and about a sand-pit—and for eight days we were occupied in digging

bridge-head defences that might be effective in case of need.

Offoy is only a few miles north of Ham, the scene of much fighting in French history. It suffered siege in 1870; it suffered complete destruction in 1918. At the time of the British advance in 1917, the only visible damage was the huge crater blasted in its cross-roads. This type of obstacle was only too common: the craters were usually very successfully blown. In some cases they were over 70 feet broad, and about 20 feet deep. Very seldom, however, did they hold up the advance: détours were rapidly made. Trees were felled across roads; but the advance had been made steadily.

The blowing of craters, the demolition of bridges, and the felling of trees were permissible military acts, but no excuse can be conceived for the ruthless wasting of the countryside. When the troops left the brown, dreary area of mud and came on to the fresh green countryside, their rejoicings were tempered by the scenes of wanton destruction. The enemy had concentrated the inhabitants of several villages into one; the other villages were totally destroyed. In the wilderness left by the retreating Huns, the most pitiful sight was the ruin of the fruit trees. The orchards, France's rural wealth, were felled. On some trees the bloom was fresh; the blossoming branches, heaped on the ground, bore mute evidence against the Hun.

To what base depths the enemy sank, his "booby-traps" gave testimony. He left many in his wake. A polished shell nose-cap, a helmet, or even a fountain pen would be cunningly attached by a wire to a bomb. The souvenir hunter suffered. In dug-outs, fires ready for lighting contained, buried amongst the coals, some explosives. Sometimes a step in one of the dug-outs was connected electrically with a big charge; the unwary were killed. Our men were warned in good time, and we escaped casualties. How fortunate were we? It is impossible to say; for it may be that we lived, unwittingly, over one of the fiendish delay-action mines. Buried deeply, without any outward sign, was the mine. Inside it, a steel wire, immersed in a tube of acid, held back the striker. Corrosion of the steel wire was slow; a week or even a month might elapse ere the diabolical death-dealer exploded. To creatures who could conceive these things, the felling of blossomed orchards would be only a pleasant recreation.

We sent a patrol into Ham to gather material for the daily reports to Brigade Headquarters. While there an officer of the Divisional Staff, Major F. W. Lumsden, D.S.O. (afterwards

Brigadier-General Lumsden, V.C.), rode out and captured a prisoner—almost a solitary captive during this period. He took him back on his orderly's horse while the orderly returned on foot, reflecting doubtless on the cursedness of things in general.

On the 29th we left Offoy for Matigny, a village methodically ruined like the rest of the countryside, and where billets were found in cellars. Our two days here were occupied in filling up the craters wherever cross-roads had been mined, and that was wherever any two roads crossed,

From there we went into the outpost line with Battalion Headquarters at Germaine. At Savy Wood a strong rearguard party was located, and our Brigade, the 96th, was held under orders to attack and clear it; the 2nd Royal Inniskilling Fusiliers and 15th Lancashire Fusiliers were the assaulting battalions; the Northumberland Fusiliers were in support. The attack began at 11.15 and was carried through with the precision of a peace manœuvre, in the face of very considerable shell-fire, which met the battalions as soon as they commenced to move out in artillery formation. The wood itself was stubbornly held, and saw some very hard fighting before it was cleared. We reached our position on the south-west corner of Savy at 2.45 p.m. Here the battalion dug in, and probably created a record for getting into the bowels of the earth. Stimulus was given by "5-9's," whose fire was all too ably directed by aeroplane. After nightfall patrols were pushed out against Holnon and Francilly, but being fired upon heavily they were driven in again.

At dawn the 14th Brigade delivered an assault and captured its objectives, among which was a place known as "The Quarry," a spot of much ill-fame, which was subsequently shelled with irritating persistency, and in which we suffered some casualties. In this position we remained for a week, during which time casualties were fairly heavy from shell-fire. Patrols discovered the enemy about one mile from our line. A good deal of hard digging was done: the isolated posts were linked up into a continuous line of trenches, wire was put out along the front, and a strong post was constructed and garrisoned.

On the 11th the French delivered an attack on St Quentin, which was about 2½ miles away over the very level plain. The attack did not succeed, but the agility with which the Frenchman flung himself to the ground and leapt up from it was an object lesson to us.

The same day the battalion was relieved; and indeed its relief had become very necessary, for throughout the preceding twelve

days the battalion had been exposed unceasingly to all the hardships that the very worst March weather can inflict upon men exposed to it. Snow, rain and biting winds had done all that was possible to break down men's health, but the spirit of endurance that prevailed was splendid, and casualties through sickness were comparatively few. Mention must be made, too, of the work of the Q.M. Stores. Efficiency in the provision of dry socks, of whale oil, and the hot meal that never failed from day to day, prevented what otherwise might have been wholesale evacuation of men suffering from exposure.

But the battalion's duty was by no means yet done. After two days spent in Germaine, it was ordered to Attilly to support an attack on Fayet, a village lodged on the steepest hillock on the plain. The attack was completely successful, German machine-gunners showing, for the first time in our experience, a tendency not to stick to their guns. On the 15th we took over Fayet from a battalion of the 14th Brigade and remained there, facing the Hindenburg line, until the 20th, where the 2nd/6th Oxon and Bucks Light Infantry took over the sector from us, and we withdrew to Germaine. Like Odysseus, we were foredone with toil; and thought no truth abided in the lines of R. L. S., where he praised the open-air life:

"Bed in the bush with stars to see.
There's the life for a man like me.
There's the life for ever."

No, we had come to utter rude things about those peering stars: "Bed in a bush," indeed; bed in a bog it was, and curse those prying stars.

Fatigue, however, made Athies, whither we marched on 21st April, all the more delectable. The Division occupied several of the ruined villages adjacent; Athies itself was so beautifully situated that even the desolation could not rob it entirely of its charm. The billets were in cellars, but winter seemed at last to have departed. Moreover, the war had receded from us, and we could rest.

St George's Day was fine, and the Regimental anniversary was kept in great style. The roses had arrived from England, and the battalion was inspected by the Brigadier on a fine parade ground just outside the village. During the afternoon games were played; and at night the guests were General Ashburner, Captains A. A. Johnson, R. H. Worthington, Wm. Lunn, and Loudoun-Shand. For the first time Colonel Scully wore the badges

of the Fifth, his new Regiment. From the records it is not quite clear whether this was due to his own initiative or to the cunning of his batman, but we think that the Colonel wished it. In any case it gave the Staff-Captain a good opening for a new verse in his after-dinner song.

AFTER NANSSEN'S PARODY

Now we've got a Colonel. His name it is Scully;
He looks a bit young, but by Jove he's just "bully";
And what is quite plain to all ranks but the dull, he
Will make a fine Fifth Fusilier.

Chorus: He's got new badges and buttons.
New badges and buttons like those sold by Huttons;
And now that he's wearing new badges and buttons
He looks a damned good Fusilier.

The evening was most cheerful and convivial, and an excellent occasion for new badges to receive their baptism of fire-water.

Training was carried out daily during this period of rest. A new system of organisation had been evolved dealing chiefly with the maximum and minimum numbers of men in sections, platoons and companies. This entailed some shuffling of men in the various platoons, and the re-organisation of companies into platoons, varying from two to four, according to the strength of the company. The field-days were of particular value, helping to weld the battalion into a highly efficient unit with an increased knowledge of the science of fighting. The study of the country, too, proved invaluable to many officers and men a year later!



Photo by]

MATIGNY.

[Capt. W. T. Richardson.

Destroyed by Germans in their retreat, March, 1917.



Drawn by]

THE ESTAMINET.

[C. Wade, 16th Bn.

CHAPTER XV

NIEUPORT

THE good time at Athies came to an end, and on 2nd May, when everyone had conveniently forgotten about the war, the battalion marched via Omiécourt to Rosières. In this long march, back again over the old front line, we had ample opportunity of seeing the ghastliness of the results of modern warfare. The roads had been re-made so as to allow traffic to pass, but on either side, without a redeeming feature, were the sites of villages. Already fallen into formlessness the trenches zig-zagged over the country; but the very foundations of the houses had gone. Belts of rusty wire, grotesque pieces of corrugated iron, shattered tree-stumps marked the contorted earth; yet it would have been difficult to find two bricks still joined together.

At Rosières, a pleasant little village, we came into the 14th, Lord Cavan's, Corps. Field training and drills, on the system introduced at Athies, were continued. Musketry was carried out on a range made in an old sand-pit. The range was short, but targets were proportionately small: there was reason to be decidedly pleased with the results. It was well that musketry was again receiving attention; it had certainly suffered partial eclipse throughout the Army during the Somme battle, in the latter stages of which men carried bombs for practical purposes and rifles largely as symbols. In this connection it should be mentioned that Colonel Scully had always, even before the "Rifle Renaissance," insisted upon every man being a really competent rifleman.

While we were at Rosières, Brigade sports were held, which were thoroughly successful. The "Pedlars," our Divisional Concert Party, kept the ball rolling in the intervals between the sports, and as rivals for the popular favour there were booths of various kinds, and one in particular in which some generous-minded man offered his head as a target to anyone who cared to 'eave 'arf a brick at it. In the sports we did extremely well and took eight firsts in twenty-three events. The Regimental Tailor

particularly showed his skill at cutting capers, and the Quartermaster, a wily man who pleaded old age, and on that score got several yards start in the hundred, ran away from his younger rivals, to their sorrow and our great delight.

The next day, the last but one of May, the battalion moved to Guillaucourt, preparatory to entraining for somewhere north of Souchez, and on the 1st of June 34 officers and 737 other ranks entrained for Caestre and arrived there at 6.30 in the evening. We had tea in Caestre before moving off for Bleu, our billeting area. What time the battalion got there is doubtful. It seemed about midnight, and that it had marched all over the unoccupied part of Belgium.

At Bleu we were in G.H.Q. reserve while the Battle of Messines was fought, and we were told off to the 2nd Anzac Corps in case of need. Roads and tracks were all reconnoitred, and on the 6th June we were standing to in readiness to move, but as the attack was completely successful we were not called upon, and on the 9th all restrictions of movement, etc., that had been imposed by the "stand to" were removed and ordinary training was again reverted to.

While we were here the G.O.C. 96th Brigade, presented the D.C.M. to R.Q.M.S. Armstrong for the work he had done at Beaumont Hamel earlier in the year. After the presentation the battalion marched past the G.O.C., who expressed great satisfaction with the smartness and steadiness of the men, praise which they certainly deserved, for how high a standard of efficiency had been reached was shown a little while later by the control which section commanders exercised over their sections on the night of July 10th and on the days subsequent to it.

We left Bleu at 6 a.m. on the 12th, a furiously hot day, and arrived at Steenvoorde after a dusty march along a road that was paved over half its width and unmetalled at the sides. A big draft that had reached the battalion the day before did not like it at all, but no one fell out. From Steenvoorde the route lay through Wormhoudt, where there was a day's halt, to Malo les Bains, which was reached on 15th June. It is an irritating place to march to, because the buildings can be seen from several miles inland, and having seen them the road leads one anywhere but to them. However, Malo les Bains was reached about 6 p.m., and about 6.30 p.m. all the battalion was bathing in the sea, about half being stung by jelly-fish. Billets were excellent; but we only had one very short night in them before proceeding up to the line to take over from the 141st French Infantry Regiment in the Nieuport

Bains sector. An advance party of officers and men had left the battalion at Wormhoudt to make straight the way of the relief; and, to avoid any suspicion that English troops were relieving the French, the relief parties wore French uniform. None the less, the enemy was very suspicious, although the relief passed off quietly on the night of the 18th June, when we moved out of the support lines in which we had spent the previous forty-eight hours. On the following two days the enemy shell fire was very noticeably heavier than it had been previously, and at 1 a.m. on 21st the climax was reached in an enemy raid, preceded by a fierce barrage, which fell at first on the front line and then on the communication trenches and the support line. The enemy entered the trench and captured our post. This was a bitter disappointment to the whole battalion, and especially to the company on which it fell, especially as the sentry posts on either flank neither saw the enemy nor heard anything to cause them to suspect that their neighbouring post was in trouble. What was more mysterious was that a wiring and covering party which had been at work in No Man's Land at the very time that the barrage descended also had not had any cause to suspect trouble. The whole raid was over in half an hour, but not the feeling of disgust at having let the enemy into the lines. The next night a similar barrage was again put down some hours after nightfall, and we thought that a second raid was in progress, but apparently it was a rather tardy retaliation for the activity of our gun-fire earlier in the evening.

The amount of damage done during these four days by shell fire was out of all proportion to the actual number of shells sent over, and there were two chief causes for this. The first was the wretched way in which the defences had been erected. Sand bagging was, of course, the only possible method of getting protection, for water lay not more than twelve inches under the surface, so that practically no digging could be done, and yet with the sole exception of the front line—which by way of compensation possessed no parados—the thickness of the top of the parapet was one sandbag and little more than double that thickness at the bottom, so that a hit from the smallest shell threw down about four yards of earthwork, and every shell that missed the trench was helping to turn the ground into a morass. Movement both through and outside trenches became very arduous, and the whole system was rendered almost worthless for defence or to provide cover for troops forming up for the assault.

An incident, typical of war, a mixture of laughter and tears, occurred during one tour in the line. A Court of Enquiry was

being held, when Fritz sent over some shells. After the din and dust had subsided somewhat, the Court proceeded, when a strange hissing sound was heard. It was unusual, and the cause soon became apparent. A splinter had ignited some rockets stored in a corner. They fizzed, and began to career wildly and fearsomely round and round the confined space. The Court adjourned amidst laughter. When it resumed it was short of witnesses. One had been killed and two wounded.

On the 23rd the 8th Royal Berks Regiment relieved us and we withdrew to Coxyde, whence, after a rest of forty-eight hours, we marched to Ghyvelde, which is over the French border and near the sea and famous among us for its *pâté de foie gras* and *pâté de porc*; also—to adopt Homer—sausages were therein in abundance, and we could soon put off the sweet desire of eating and drinking. Here we were billeted for ten days, practising the attack for platoon, company and battalion. A skeleton system of trenches had been dug to represent the German defences of Lombartzyde, a village lying on a very slight rise in the otherwise totally flat polder country and lying just outside the belt of sand dunes.

On the 4th we marched to Jeanniot Camp outside Coxyde and spent about thirty hours there, incidentally catching a very fleeting glance at H.M. The King as he motored past towards the line, a direction in which we followed, less one company—"C"—which remained behind to practise a raid on an enemy block-house for His Majesty to see. Shortly afterwards we proceeded to Nieuport to take over the dug-outs and duties of the 15th H.L.I. The duties for the three companies in Nieuport consisted of building by night a totally new support line, and had it not been blown to pieces before completion it would doubtless have been a very excellent line.

Meanwhile "C" Company was reconnoitring No Man's Land to select the precise objective for its raid and to discover the best method of approach. It certainly did its work thoroughly, for No Man's Land became a playground after dark for Colonel Scully, Lieutenant Watson, and most of his company. Four days were spent in this way, and the one thing noticeable was that while by day the enemy's guns were shelling frequently over a wide area, not a shell came over by night. In fact, the shelling, which was quite unpleasant in that street of Nieuport where we drew stores for the night's work, ceased finally about ten minutes before the time at which parties had to report at the R.E. Stores.

The working parties returned to billets at about 2.30 a.m. on the morning of the 10th July, and after about four hours' sleep

we awoke with the sensation that everything was not well and realised that Nieuport was being bombarded—very satisfactorily from the enemy's point of view—nor did it relax as time went on, but worked up to a vicious intensity. There were some particularly unpleasant guns, one 12-inch making the earth rock and tremble. We could notice the excellent work it was doing because it was converting one-time houses into deep holes in the ground, just along a path which had to be followed to get to Battalion Headquarters. There were many naval guns at work, too, and their projectiles came with a particularly unpleasant speed and noise. The bombardment had not been going on for long before all wires were cut, but from an observation post it was seen that the area in trouble lay from the sea to Nieuport, that is, along all the British front. All was normal on the Belgian front, which joined the right of the 32nd Division in the St George's sector held by the 16th Lancashire Fusiliers.

A special word of praise is due to Sergeant Ellis and his observers, who remained until the last possible moment in an observation post which at the best of times was unsafe, and was now in one of the hottest corners of a town which was being subjected to a most destructive fire of high explosive and gas shells.

The battalion was standing to in the cellars, having drawn bombs from the Brigade Store, fortunately with only very slight casualties to the carrying parties. Waiting for the word to move up, combined with the entire lack of news, was very trying, and the hours seemed interminable. Some people found arms-drill a pleasant game until a shell hit the outer wall of the building, when they ordered arms with remarkable speed and doubled back to cellars, out of which, urged by sheer boredom, they had just emerged.

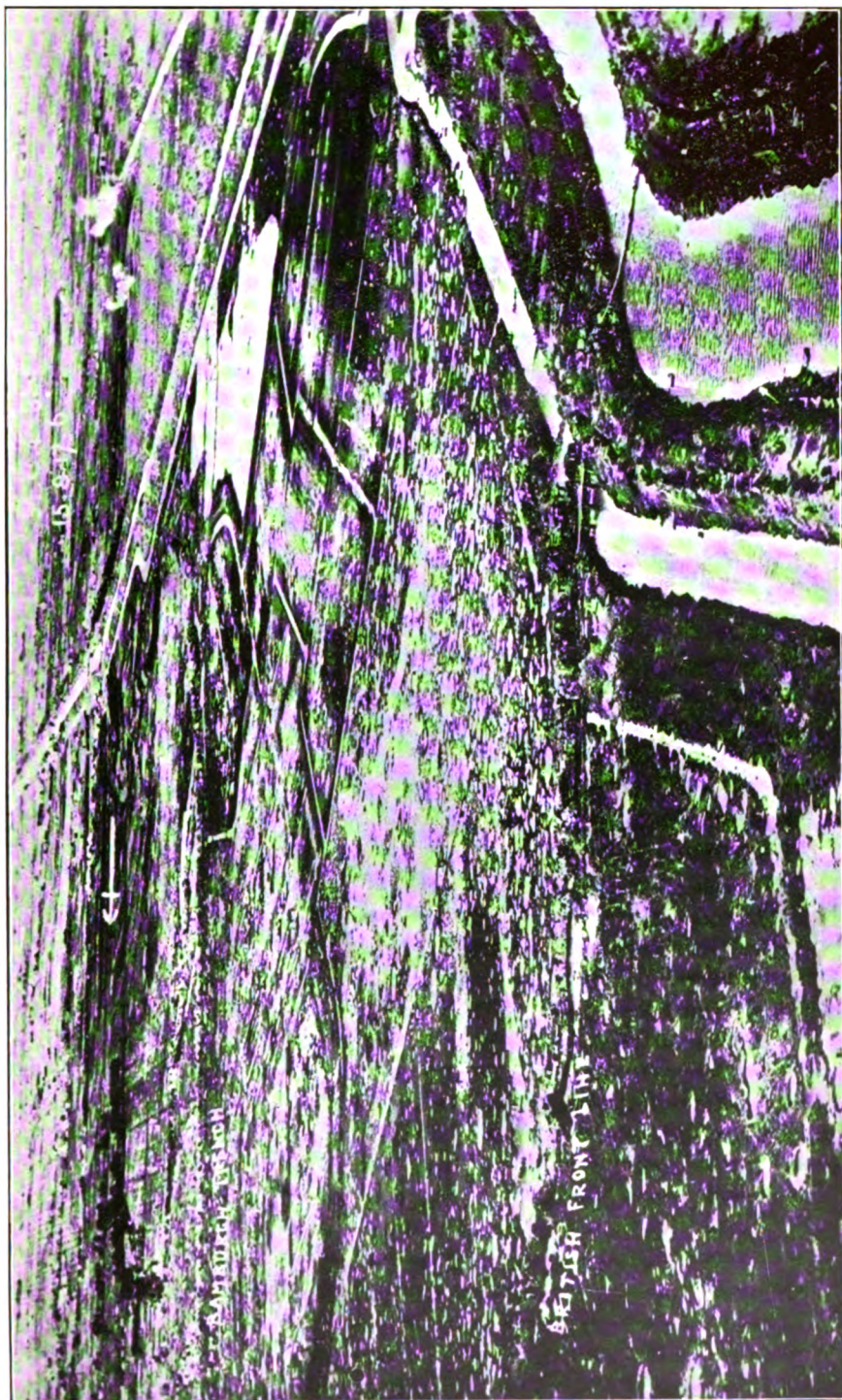
The afternoon and evening were as the morning, except that the fire grew still heavier, and we came under the orders of the 97th Brigade, as we did for so much of our fighting in 1917. "C" Company was then moved to a road junction 300 yards west of the town, to await orders, and while waiting it suffered about 30 casualties. At last, at 10 o'clock, orders did come to move. The three companies in Nieuport were moved into the inner defences of the town, which ran along the west bank of the Yser Canal—a very extended position covering about 1,600 yards. The move was difficult, as the night was pitch dark, the whole area was foul with gas, and houses were falling down everywhere. But it was admirably and quickly carried out. Now the efficiency

of the battalion, and particularly of section commanders, could and did show itself. All bridges across the canal had, of course, long been down, but engineers were trying with all speed to throw one sketchy bridge across, which they eventually succeeded in doing. It consisted principally of trench boards and a B3 signal wire. At 2 a.m. orders were received to close, cross by this solitary and narrow bridge, to find out where parties of the 11th Border Regiment existed and to relieve them. There remained two hours of darkness in which to do this. That it was done, in spite of a guide allotted to one company losing his way, revealed the leadership of the section commanders and the determination of the men.

At 2 p.m. "A" Company was detailed to deliver an attack on a portion of trenches that had been lost. While moving to the forming-up place they came into full view and were met with sniping and machine-gun fire; when they had arrived there a barrage of 5.9's was added to their other troubles. The G.S.O.3 of the Division, who was in the lines, decided that the attack could not possibly succeed in daylight, and the order was cancelled. It seems a pity that it was ever required in the daylight, for it had no chance of success, and it resulted in heavy casualties. The task of "O" Company, to whom the operation was entrusted after nightfall, was made the more difficult because it showed the enemy—who, indeed, could have known it from the general situation—from where the counter-attack would be launched. Consequently he put down barrages on that line at intervals of about thirty minutes throughout the night. His fire during the day had made all that low-lying country a swamp in which movement was as laborious and slow as it had been in the latest and muddiest days of the Somme battle.

"O" Company relieved "A" in the front line at 10.45, and shortly afterwards a fresh German attack, accompanied by an intense barrage on first, second and reserve lines, was delivered on "D" Company's front, but was successfully repulsed. At 1.45 "O" Company commenced to move forward to the attack, but was stopped by rifle and machine-gun fire which inflicted heavy loss, including both the officers. The trench was never recovered by any of the numerous attacks delivered on it by succeeding battalions of our own and of other divisions.

In the early hours of the 12th the 5th/6th Royal Scots relieved the battalion, which withdrew to Nieuport, and was under orders to man the defences in case of need. That night the 1st Dorset Regiment took our place in Nieuport, and we were drawn back



By permission of

NIEUPOORT SECTOR.

[Air Ministry.

to Ribaillet Camp, which was situated in the vicinity of our guns of heavier calibre, and consequently was somewhat frequently shelled. There was no effective shelter, as it was situated just off the Dunes. As time went on, its very name grew to stink in our nostrils. On the 15th we marched back to Nieuport and completed the relief of the 15th Lancashire Fusiliers by 1 a.m. "B" Company was thrown across the canal to support the 1st Dorsets, then in the line, and about to attack the same trench that we and the Royal Scots had previously tackled, but it was withdrawn after some hours.

The 1st/8th West Yorkshires, of the 49th Division, took our place in Nieuport, and the battalion marched back to Jeanniot Camp, where it remained for eight days, supplying large working and carrying parties, so that there was little time left in which to train. While here, two drafts joined the battalion, about 240 men in all. They were badly needed to make up the losses of the 10th and 11th.

From Jeanniot Camp the battalion went back to Bray Dunes, taking over the coast defences of that area, and spent four days there in training and supplying working parties, but marched back to Coxyde on the last day of July. This move was due to the very heavy casualties of the 49th Division, particularly from gas shelling. This was our first experience of mustard gas.

Next day we moved up to Ribaillet Camp, whence advance parties were sent up to reconnoitre the St George's Sector, into which the battalion went on August 3rd. The sector had been, in comparison with the Lombartzyde area, fairly quiet, but latterly the Germans had devised a scheme of putting down at irregular and frequent intervals during the night short but fierce bombardments of all tenable positions. This was a very disquieting habit, often resulting in very heavy loss. One evening it rather more than halved the effective personnel of one company. Fortunately this was the exception and not the rule, but it was always very dangerous and liable to do considerable damage, as the fire was enfilade and the defences were entirely innocent of any form of traverse throughout most of their length.

But the battalion, too, was busy and made itself offensive. Patrols had reconnoitred Rat Post on the two first nights in the trenches, and on the third night, 6th August, Lieutenant Townsend and sixteen men raided the post, entered it and killed all the Germans they found there, and remained twenty minutes looking for more, who unfortunately were not forthcoming. The only regret was that no living German was brought back.

Lieutenant Townsend was wounded, with four of his men. That evening "B" Company relieved "C" Company and was detailed to raid again on the night of the 12th August at 12.45. The company was formed up in good order and moved forward under a good barrage at 1 a.m. They entered Rat Post and pushed on towards Raven Trench. Three Germans only were found who put up a stout resistance; unfortunately they had to be killed. They were wanted alive, but papers and letters, etc., were taken, which furnished the required information.

During one raid a strange sight was seen. A subaltern, small and slim, encountered a burly fat Hun. The enemy, seeing the officer with his revolver, turned and fled, hotly pursued by the young boy. Rapid movement is not possible in trenches, or in makeshift breastworks. The sequel came soon, for the subaltern apologised to his senior officer for creating a disturbance: the Hun was sprawling on the parapet, with a .455 bullet in him.

On the 9th the 16th Lancashire Fusiliers relieved us, and we marched as far west as Ribaillet Camp—that net in which we were always caught. Ribaillet Camp held us with difficulty—for many of the huts were now damaged—for seven days, during which time we toiled up the line at night with gas projectors and other similar *objets d'art*, and rested by day, when we were repaid in our own coin, namely, gas.

On the 17th we left the Camp, spent the night at Coxyde, and moved next day to Bray Dunes, where twelve days were spent in training and in assimilating new drafts. On the 29th we returned to Jeanniot, now renamed Canada Camp. The Division was going back to replace the 33rd, which had relieved it a fortnight before. Being rebaptised into the new world certainly had a stimulating effect on old Jeanniot: it was now more subjected to gifts from high-velocity guns and enemy planes. The latter, from an evening's sport at Dunkerque, used to drop any superfluous ballast into the camp. They tried to break up a Battalion Concert one night, but the performers were adamant; besides, it was a good show, and included a skit on the G.O.C. Brigade, a thing never to be lightly missed.

Enemy efforts to break up a happy home were more successful on the morning of the 8th, when a high-velocity high-explosive highly dangerous shell burst on the edge of the concrete base of the wood hut in which were sleeping the officers of Battalion Headquarters. The hut was wrecked, and people were thrown violently about and out of their compartments, and had the narrowest escapes from splinters. The beds, now jagged and torn, in which they

had been sleeping made one feel one's head to make sure that it was still there. Major Archer, the Adjutant, and the M.O. were all buried in the débris. They were nearest to the place where the shell alighted, and yet only the M.O. was seriously injured; but happily he has long since recovered. The Adjutant was discovered declaring that Lord Nelson was quite safe, whereat the ranks of Tuscany could scarce forbear to cheer. Major Archer was slightly wounded. After extensive excavations he was found lying underneath a pile of laths strewn about with pyjamas and underclothes. All were suffering considerably from shock, and in the course of the day Captain Lindsay, who was at the time attached to the Brigade Staff, took over command of the battalion, Colonel Scully being then on leave.

We went into the Lombartzyde right sub-sector on the night of 12th September, relieving the 5th/6th Royal Scots. The first three days were comparatively uneventful, with only the ordinary amount of shell and machine-gun fire. The bridges over the Yser were, as usual, shot away and repaired at the rate of about one per hour. But this, of course, was mere routine, as it had happened night and day since 10th July. It made a fine puzzle game for Brigade-Majors, the aim being to get the staff chart of the-bridges-open-for-traffic to correspond with the true situation at any given moment. There was no truth in the rumour that maps and situation ever coincided.

On the third day of the tour an attempt was made to raid our lines at the junction of the companies holding the line. The raiding party entered the trench and moved towards No. 2 Post of "B" Company, who opened fire, whereupon the Germans threw bombs and ran away. One man was killed in the trench. The remainder were pursued by bullets, and also became entangled in a barrage put down by our artillery. Our casualties were not light, in view of the size of the affair, and were all due to the enemy trench mortar barrage.

On the 17th the Inniskilling Fusiliers relieved us for four days, when we in turn relieved them and did three more days in front of Lombartzyde. The Inniskilling Fusiliers again relieved us, and we left the front system of trenches in the Nieuport area for the last time, to our great relief, for we had begun to feel that the 96th Brigade would still be relieving itself over the Yser Canal when the end of the war or of the world came.

In Nieuport we spent five days in reserve, providing wiring and carrying parties, but on the 29th we turned our backs on Nieuport's subverted gas-works—the only recognisable thing left—

and strode out for Canada Camp. Everybody felt that it was a good camp because it was not Ribaillet! Coxyde was left on the 2nd of October, in exchange for La Panne—a much more pleasant place, though bombed. There was a large and sociable hospital there. It was said that one billeting officer found the staff so sociable that he forgot to billet his battalion—a circumstance which led an officer of dizzily high rank to compare unflatteringly the size of his heart and the capacity of his brain. But he was not a Northumberland Fusilier.

About seven weeks were to pass before the battalion again came into action, the greater part of which time was spent around the Fort des Dunes outside Dunkerque, and very near Malo les Bains, which had been our last resting place in June before tasting the delights of Nieuport. We marched to Fort des Dunes from La Panne on the 5th October, taking the direct route along the sea-shore, which runs very straight, and the sand was hard and good to march on now the tide had gone out. There was a fresh wind, which so upset the band that at the second halt the Corporal who was then in charge of the band asked that the band might be allowed to cease playing, as he said that “all their notes were being blown up their instruments.”

The Fort des Dunes, when we got to it, we found occupied by a company of French Infantry; four antiquated cannon fired down four fosses; so we went into tents among the sand hills. After three weeks spent in coast defence and refitting and training—spent, in fact, like all Divisional Rests—we again packed the limbers, heaved mess-boxes into cookers at the last moment—no, they did not go in the Headquarters’ mess-cart; that was reserved for Headquarters’ batmen’s kit—and having girded up our loins, came, on 26th October, to Zeggars Cappel, where another three weeks were passed as the preceding three had been, except that we had no coast to defend.

There was some difficulty over billets at Zeggars Cappel, where the gentlemen of the Corps Staff raised various objections. We were, after protests, made fairly comfortable in farm-houses, etc., but, as there were plenty of billets, there should have been no hardships.

CHAPTER XVI

THE YPRES SALIENT

THE training-rest at Zeggars Cappel ended on 11th November, when the battalion marched to Ledringhem on the first stage of its journey to Ypres. Several of the officers had already reconnoitred the sector whither we were bound; their descriptions were not received with expressions of joy. Throughout the war the Salient had an unenviable reputation. It deserved it all. Somehow, when a unit made its first entry into that part of the front, it felt at once the infinite gloom of the place. The general flatness; the mud; the stagnant ditches; the prevalent monotony were its physical features, sufficiently depressing. But the "feel" of the area intensified the depression. Merely to hold the sector cost thousands of lives every month. An attack there could be nothing but annihilation. Memories of the three previous years hung about the salient like a grey shroud.

Into this area the battalion marched: to Oudezele on the 12th November, and on to Turco Farm, where dug-outs and "shanties" afforded cover. This was the area where the Canadians had fought and were gassed in 1915. Like the war-zone everywhere, it was "the abomination of desolation," only more so, if that were possible. The work consisted of finding fatigue parties for the artillery. These were unpleasant, but we were wonderfully fortunate in escaping casualties: our sympathy for the gunners increased. In early days retaliation meant that the artillery on either side liberally sprayed with shells the opposing infantry in their trenches: later, it was gun against gun, battery against battery. "Spotting" batteries had become a fine art: sound-ranging became a very exact science. The forward batteries of 18-pounders, almost devoid of cover, had an especially warm time. For a week the work of keeping certain batteries supplied with shells went on; then the battalion went back to Brake Camp, not far from Poperinghe.

The camp was pleasant enough, hidden away in the woods north-west of Vlamertinghe. While we occupied it no bombs fell there.

The enemy planes had evidently other targets, for they were very busy elsewhere, making night hideous with the drone of their engines and the crash of their bombs. Preliminary orders came through, defining the extent and nature of the proposed attack. For this the 97th Brigade was detailed; the 16th Northumberland Fusiliers were attached to them for the battle, their rôle being that of counter-counter-attack troops.

Reconnaissances of the line were made by parties sent from Brake Camp. They made their first acquaintance with the Meetcheele-Mosselmarkt Road, just north of Passchendaele, at the nose of the salient. To those who tried to use that road the name of it will always bring horror. There were only two possible ways up to the sector, the road or a duck-board track. The road was enfiladed by machine-gun fire; batteries dropped shells along it at short intervals. The duck-board track was frequently not there, for the enemy reduced many of the duck-boards to matchwood, so accurate was his shooting. To travel overland was impossible. From Houthulst Forest, south beyond Passchendaele, the conditions were indescribable. The mud was so deep that a wounded man who fell had little hope of rising again; many were drowned in the mud. The long, dreary, exposed communications were few; they were constantly under fire; the wounded could not be got back to the aid posts. Many, all too many, were killed on the tracks; the unburied bodies were a dismal greeting to troops moving up to the attack.

The battalion went into the line on 30th November, two days before the attack. On taking over from the Inniskilling Fusiliers we found that the Germans had successfully established themselves with a machine gun in Teall Cottages. An abortive attempt to turn them out was made the same night. In the early morning the two companies on the left were attacked by the enemy, who were repulsed by Lewis-gun and rifle fire. One wounded man was made prisoner.

The attack by the 97th Brigade, with the 15th Lancashire Fusiliers on their left, began at 1.55 a.m. on 2nd December, under a barrage of machine-gun fire. The night was clear and moonlit. At once the advance was seen, and rifles and machine guns opened on the assaulting troops. S.O.S. rockets soared, but the German artillery was slow to answer. When it did come the shell-fire was neither heavy nor effective.

At 3 a.m. our companies closed their sections in order to be ready if a counter-attack came. The situation was not clear; no news had come through. Teall Cottages remained untaken; the right flank of the battalion on that front was pinned down.



Photo by]

DIXMUDE.

[Alfred Brewis.

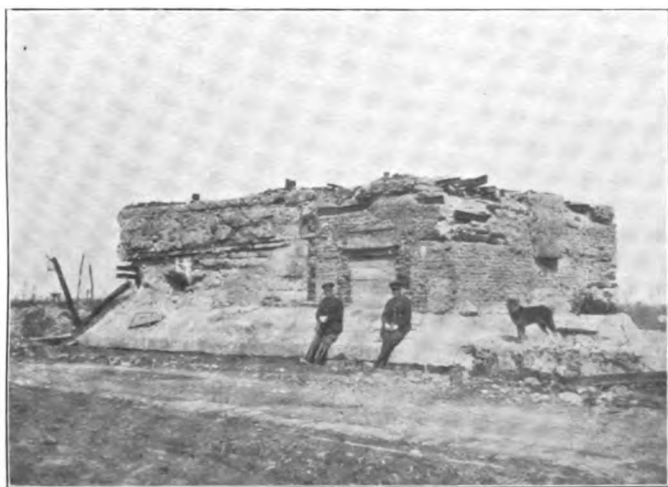


Photo by]

EGYPT HOUSE. *[Capt. C. A. F. Stewart.*
Headquarters of Battalion, February, 1918.

Probably, the battalion had lost direction. The team working that machine gun in Teall Cottages allowed wounded men to be brought in so long as the stretcher-bearers did not go too near the post. At the same time they could see the encouraging spectacle of their own countrymen going through our lines as prisoners. The latter were in sad condition; their *morale* was gone: but the machine-gunners in Teall Cottages were in rare form!

On the extreme left the Lancashire Fusiliers had done all that was required of them. Theirs was a difficult manœuvre, a sort of echelon attack: the left company had to move only a short distance, while the right traversed over 500 yards. The whole battalion, when in position, formed a defensive flank to the battalions of the 97th Brigade.

The day, for us, passed quietly until about 4.15 p.m., when, just at nightfall, a barrage was put down by the enemy, supported by heavy machine-gun fire. At once the S.O.S. went up from the front line, and some of the attacking brigade were driven in. Colonel Scully, whose headquarters were at Virile Farm, adjoining those of "C" and "D" Companies, immediately ordered these companies forward, and to take with them every man of any regiment. He set the example; he brought out every available man of Headquarters, and led the way. The companies went forward splendidly. It was an advance into the unknown, for no information had been received all day: but the line was advanced 300 yards, and touch maintained with the Lancashire Fusiliers on the left, and our own companies on the right. To those who know of the conditions—the sea of mud, and the leaden sleet of bullets from the pill-boxes—the mere recital of the facts is sufficiently indicative of the heroic spirit.

While the battalion was in the line the task of reaching it with rations and supplies was superhuman. Up the long, perilously exposed tracks hot meals were carried: the fatigue of the carry alone was enough for normal men. Tragedy hovered over the trip. On the night of 2nd December, Second-Lieutenant Collins, the Transport Officer, accompanied by Q.M.S. Hood, reached Battalion Headquarters in fulfilment of their duty. They left, were guided on to the track, but were never seen again.

During this tour of duty the casualties amounted to 1 officer missing, 4 officers wounded, 23 men killed, 10 missing, and 83 wounded. Relief came on 3rd December, and the battalion was withdrawn to Irish Farm, "Nissen huts floating on mud." Still, the mud was of ascertainable depth, unlike that in the treacherous battle area. And the camp was out of the line. For this mercy

all were truly thankful. During nine days we spent a tolerably comfortable time, and returned to the line on the 13th December.

The Division having side-slipped a little to the north, the battalion took over the front between the Paddebeek and the Lekker Botterbeek, with Battalion Headquarters at Hubner Farm. An attempt was made in conjunction with the 15th Lancashire Fusiliers to cut off a group of enemy pill-boxes. To do this two posts had to be established at points behind the pill-boxes. These posts were established and remained there until the night of the 17th, when they were ordered to be withdrawn. During the night the battalion was relieved, and went to Siege Camp, staying there six days.

Preparations for the Christmas festivities were in full swing. Large supplies of good things had been ordered, for it was expected that the battalion would spend Christmas in a comparatively war-free area. It was not to be, for on 23rd December we were ordered to exchange quarters with the 2nd Manchesters, who were in the Ypres-Comines Canal Bank. That move precluded the possibility of celebration; the festivities were postponed. Such "extras" as would not keep were disposed of to other units; some were used to supplement our own rations.

No one was sorry to leave the Canal Bank dug-outs. They were part of the general cheerlessness of the Salient. On the 29th December the battalion marched to Irish Farm and entrained at mid-day for Audruicq, arriving there at 5.40 p.m. It was very dark and very cold—the canal had been frozen before we left it—and tea was served before the troops began their twenty-five kilometre march to Sanghem and Alembon, near Calais. Snow had fallen, and the surface of the roads was slippery. There were many falls; there was much expression of opinion of the state of the roads, the time of the march, and the repetition of the bumps. Even a mild man may be irritated by falling heavily and repeatedly when he is encumbered with pack and rifle. After one of the most exhausting marches the battalion ever experienced, Sanghem was reached at midnight, and Alembon an hour later. The field-kitchens, which had come by a later train, and the transport, which had been on the road three days, arrived later. They were again very welcome.

The residents received us cordially, and did much to make us comfortable. Headquarters Mess was in the house of a retired veteran French officer, who had fought in the Franco-Prussian War of 1870. He was a very interesting old gentleman, who added to the general spirit of geniality. During the stay the weather was bad; snow lay about, and the intense cold interfered with training.

It is exceedingly difficult to get troops to take warm interest in mock battles when the thermometer steadily indicates several degrees of frost. Of course, a snow-fight is another matter!

The one drawback to the secluded life in these pretty villages was the inspection by the Corps Commander, fixed for 8th January. The weather was at its worst; soon after the battalion started a blizzard blotted out the landscape. For nearly six miles the troops plodded on, only to be told that the inspection was cancelled. Wet through, the men returned to billets, each expressive of one big query. The answer to it is not yet forthcoming. One joy only the day possessed—the sight of the C.O., newly returned from leave, resplendent in perfect-fitting field-boots of a wondrous art shade of tan. Yet even these “poems in leather” did not prevent the Colonel from falling twice. To their credit be it reported, the leading fours never looked so solemn.

The next day the postponed Christmas celebrations were held. Pork, real pork—not the variety that was always reported “missing” amongst the beans—took the place of honour. There were hosts of other good things, made possible by the generosity of the Chamber of Commerce, and the day was a success. Sing-songs were popular, and the unanimous vote was that the postponement of the festivities had been a sound scheme.

On the 18th January, under improved weather conditions and the guidance of twenty-two pages of typewritten matter on the subject from the Brigade, the battalion began its journey in the direction of the front line. It was a march of two days to the entraining point at Audruicq, the first night being spent in comfortable quarters in the village of Landrethun. The battalion detrained at Elverdinghe, and again occupied the conglomeration of huts known as Dirty Bucket Camp, which apparently had not been repaired since the early days of the campaign. On 22nd, the 16th moved to Irish Farm, across the canal, for work on the system of defence called the “Army Line.”

The heavy toll of life in the great battles was beginning to tell. Battalions were thinned; drafts of fighting calibre were scarce; changes in organisation were foreshadowed. In addition, there was an uneasy feeling that in 1918 the initiative had passed to the Germans. The Russian collapse had freed large bodies of enemy troops, and these had been transferred to the Western front. The internal condition of Germany made it imperative that all must be staked on one colossal venture: such mighty gamble was indeed freely discussed. Where would the blow fall? The Higher Staffs made a good guess at it; but no front that might be attacked

was to be left without adequate preparation. In the salient the triple defences, Front Line, Corps Line, and Army Line were strengthened daily. Old enemy pill-boxes were incorporated; concrete emplacements of the latest pattern seemed to grow like mushrooms; miles of wire were run out; and fighting gave way to heavy manual labour. At this period the new British organisation was published: instead of four battalions per Brigade, there would be three only.

The battalion, on the night of the 30th January, relieved the 2nd Inniskillings in the front line, near Poelcappelle Station. Only the Commanding Officer knew that this was to be the battalion's last tour in the line as a unit. The secret had been well kept. The tour was unfortunate. While visiting the front line posts the first night, Major Thompson was severely wounded. On the 31st, during a heavy mist, the enemy raided a post held by part of "D" Company, and took ten prisoners. Determined attempts were made on each of the two succeeding nights "to get a bit of our own back," but the enemy was very much on the alert.

We were relieved on the night 3rd/4th February by the 16th Lancashire Fusiliers, and went into Brigade Reserve. Here the incredible rumour swept through the ranks—the 16th Battalion was to be disbanded. The greatest consternation prevailed. The rumour was too wildly absurd for belief. But only too soon was the truth published. On 5th February, the battalion moved to Emile Camp, Elverdinghe, to await disbandment. The next day, the Divisional Commander and the Brigadier inspected the battalion and thanked us for the fine work accomplished. The G.O.C. assured all ranks of his great sorrow at losing such a battalion. Only the new scheme of reducing Brigades from four to three battalions was responsible for the drastic step, and he knew that the companies would prove their fighting qualities and loyalty in the formations to which they were being sent.

In all the sadness of the disbandment, the sorrows of the severance of hard-proved ties, there was one consolation: The Fusiliers were to remain Fusiliers. "A" Company was detailed to the 4th Battalion Northumberland Fusiliers, "B" to the 5th Battalion, "C" to the 6th Battalion, and "D" to the 7th Battalion. Consolation, yes: but nothing could replace the wonderful *esprit de corps*. Though the companies were scattered, and gallantly fought throughout the year right up to Armistice, the 16th Battalion Northumberland Fusiliers as such ceased to exist. During the afternoon of the 7th February, 1918, the companies marched off

to their new units; hearts were heavy, heads were erect as the band of the 2nd Manchesters played the martial strains of "The British Grenadiers." The 16th Battalion was disbanded; but no official order could ever end the magnificent spirit which had made the battalion such an efficient unit of the great "Fighting Fifth."

EMBARKATION ROLL

23rd NOVEMBER, 1915

HEADQUARTERS.	REMARKS.
Lieut.-Colonel W. H. Ritson, V.D. Major A. W. Little, Second-in-Command. Lieut. R. H. Worthington, Adjutant.	Awarded C.M.G. Lieut.-Colonel. Captain; awarded M.C. To R.A.F.
Lieut. F. A. George, Machine-gun Officer. Lieut. G. T. Edwards, Transport Officer. Lieut. and Q.M. E. L. Pears. Captain R. B. Rutherford, R.A.M.C.	Captain and Q.M. Major; awarded M.C.

" A " COMPANY:

OFFICERS.	REMARKS.
Captain G. Nesbit, O.C. Captain A. C. Young, Second-in-Command. Lieut. C. W. Porter, No. 1 Platoon. 2nd-Lieut. A. Park, No. 2 Platoon. 2nd-Lieut. G. S. Southern, No. 3 Platoon.	Awarded M.C. Killed. To M.G.C. Captain. Killed. Lieut. to R.E. special company.
Lieut. R. W. Falconer, No. 4 Platoon.	Killed.

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
16/933	O.S.M.	Crozier, J. C.	Mentioned in dispatches.
16/56	O.Q.M.S.	Dewing, J. R.	
16/194	Sergeant	Angus, A.	
16/723	"	Bell, J. C.	
16/178	"	Bolam, J.	
16/758	"	Graham, R. P.	
16/7	"	Hall, J.	
16/476	Corpl.	Hirst, R.	
16/767	Sergeant	Hood, T.	
16/53	"	Leach, T.	
			C.Q.M.S. C.S.M.

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
16/571	Sergeant	Mair, W.	
16/226	„	Noble, R.	
16/66	„	Rutter, M.	
16/47	„	Simpson, A. H.	
16/161	„	Todd, R.	
16/962	„	Viner, W. H.	
A.O.C. / 1837	A.S.S.	Strike, A.	
16/233	L/Sgt.	Hargreaves, A.	C.Q.M.S.
16/40	„	Hills, J. S.	
16/168	„	King, D. W.	Lt. Indian Army.
16/1432	Corpl.	Bowman, H. A.	
16/197	„	Carr, B.	
16/1084	„	Cashman, J. D.	
16/88	„	Dodds, A. A.	
16/5	„	Dunglinson, D.	
16/58	„	Huntley, W.	
16/218	„	Jones, D.	
16/92	„	Mathewson, B. S. P.	
16/94	„	Stobbs, J. W.	Sergeant.
16/208	„	Thompson, J.	
16/240	„	Thompson, J. C.	
16/148	L/Cpl.	Archbold, C. W.	
16/1290	Pte.	Armstrong, J.	
16/228	L/Cpl.	Bulman, G.	Sergeant.
16/4	„	Curry, P. J.	
16/524	„	Davison, J. H.	
16/6	„	Dunglinson, W.	2nd-Lt. 1st N.F
16/246	„	Ellis, J.	
16/118	„	Embleton, W. C.	
16/184	„	Gordon, C.	
16/1372	„	Glasgow, A.	
16/232	Corpl.	Hall, J.	
16/74	L/Cpl.	Hedley, T.	
16/271	„	Hedges, C. F.	
16/25	„	Hetherington, R.	
16/153	„	Hewitt, A. E.	
16/250	„	Irving, R.	
16/139	„	Lacey, J.	
16/76	„	Laws, W. J.	
16/125	„	Nicholson, N.	

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
16/1308	L/Cpl.	Owens, T.	
16/204	"	Pearson, J. A.	
16/110	"	Scott, J. R.	
16/111	"	Smyth, H. R.	
16/129	"	Thompson, H.	
16/12	"	Todd, H. G.	
16/98	"	Watson, S. B.	
16/163	Pte.	Aisbitt, A.	
16/164	"	Allon, H. E.	
16/1233	"	Angus, T.	
16/85	"	Appleby, J.	
16/1107	"	Anderson, J.	
16/1105	"	Armstrong, J. J.	
16/16	"	Armstrong, J. R.	
16/102	"	Askeland, N. A.	
16/54	"	Atkinson, J. L.	
16/196	"	Audas, F.	
16/71	"	Bell, J. H.	Att. 24th N.F.
16/1140	"	Bates, A.	
16/87	"	Bell, Jos.	
16/1492	"	Bell, Wm.	
16/131	"	Blair, S.	
16/18	"	Blake, A. W.	
16/198	"	Bolam, T.	Lt. M.G. Corps; awarded M.C.
16/36	"	Brewis, J. R.	
16/1135	"	Brown, G. P.	
16/1286	"	Brown, Wm.	
16/1215	"	Brown, Wm.	
16/132	"	Brown, D.	
16/133	"	Bruce, F. M.	
16/165	"	Bruce, R. S.	
16/179	"	Brumpton, G.	
16/86	"	Bryan, S.	Sergeant.
16/20	"	Capstaffe, E.	2nd-Lt. R.G.A.; awarded M.C.
16/1374	"	Chambers, E. S.	
16/199	"	Charlton, J. W.	
16/822	"	Charlton, M.	
16/286	"	Chaston, H.	Trans. 16th Lancs. Fusiliers; awarded M.S.M.

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
16/55	Pte.	Chreseson, G.	
16/72	"	Clark, J.	
16/244	"	Clasper, F.	
16/151	"	Cockburn, E. A.	
16/1238	"	Colling, J. W. D.	
16/181	"	Cook, A. F.	Att. 9th Cheshire Reg.
16/192	"	Corbett, W. M.	
16/1354	"	Craggs, J. R.	
16/183	"	Davenport, C. C.	
16/152	"	Davidson, R. J.	
16/37	"	Davison, S.	
16/104	"	Dennett, F. J.	
16/1123	"	Dickinson, J. C.	
16/1428	"	Dickson, A.	
16/57	"	Dixon, W.	
16/229	"	Dodd, H. F.	
16/212	"	Dodgson, G.	
16/105	"	Dobson, W.	
16/1347	"	Donnison, J.	
16/38	"	Douglas, J.	
16/1382	"	Dyson, C.	
16/1212	"	Dickinson, S. J.	
16/213	"	Eaglesham, W.	
16/200	"	Elliott, J.	
16/1092	"	Embleton, R. W.	Att. 4th N.F.; awarded M.M.
16/1215	"	English.	
16/247	"	Forster, J. D.	Att. 11th N.F.
16/248	"	Gall, H.	
16/89	"	Gardner, T. C.	
16/24	"	Gleason, E.	
16/119	"	Gledhill, W. V.	Att. 22nd N.F.
16/106	"	Girling, F.	
16/231	"	Golightly, C.	Lt. 19th D.L.I.
16/1388	"	Graham, J. S.	
16/230	"	Graham, J. M.	
16/201	"	Gristwood, J. D.	
16/185	"	Haddon, J.	
16/1120	"	Hardy, A.	13th Entrenching Batt.

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
16/215	Pte.	Harker, J. E.	
16/1357	"	Harle, J.	
16/122	"	Harris, L.	
16/1098	"	Harrison, A. L.	
16/216	"	Hattle, S. E.	
16/1275	"	Hawkins, J. W.	
16/1403	"	Hawthorn, Jos.	
16/1409	"	Hawthorn, J.	
16/234	"	Henderson, S.	
16/75	"	Herriott, A. M.	
16/120	"	Hornsby, F.	
16/90	"	Howe, R.	
16/136	"	Hull, J. E.	
16/1146	"	Kendall, A.	
16/42	"	Kirkley, J.	
16/1395	"	Kyles, H.	
16/186	"	Lambert, H. T.	
16/1346	"	Lawson, J.	
16/169	"	Levy, J.	Lance-Corporal.
16/251	"	Liddle, T.	
16/1425	"	Little, R.	
16/93	"	Longstaff, J. S.	Trans. to 2nd Shropshire L.I. Salonica.
16/1359	"	McAninly, J. J.	
16/44	"	McGillan, H.	
16/1495	"	McKinney, W. T.	
16/1307	"	McMahon, J. J.	
16/1203	"	McMillan, J.	
16/252	"	Mackay, F. A.	
16/77	"	Madden, J.	
16/1173	"	Major, J.	
16/9	"	Marshall, T. V.	
16/43	"	Martin, A. P.	
16/142	"	Mason, F. C.	
16/156	"	Maughan, W. D.	Lt. 17th N.F.
16/143	"	Maxton, J.	
16/1145	"	Metcalf, D.	
16/78	"	Metcalf, E.	
16/1228	"	Middlemas, C.	
16/1174	"	Miller, M. H.	

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
16/1597	Pte.	Moody, A. A.	2nd-Lt. 22nd N.F.
16/1221	"	Moon, T. W.	
16/60	"	Moore, W. B.	
16/236	"	Morrison, J. H.	
16/237	"	Morrison, T. R.	
16/1367	"	Morton, J. G.	
16/1507	"	Neilson, J.	
16/171	"	Noble, J. H.	
16/157	"	Ord, T.	
16/1252	"	O'Connor, F.	
16/1485	"	Pattinson, R. B.	
16/238	"	Peary, W. R.	
16/1086	"	Penman, J. T.	
16/1405	"	Pettigrew, E.	
16/115	"	Pickering, S.	
16/172	"	Pollard, H.	
16/83	"	Price, F. D.	
16/2	"	Price, R.	
16/158	"	Purvis, A. R.	
16/1214	"	Purvis, J. E.	
16/253	"	Raine, W.	
16/97	"	Ramsay, A.	
16/662	"	Ramsay, W.	
16/254	"	Richardson, G.	
16/127	"	Richman, M.	
16/189	"	Ridley, A. D.	
16/1085	"	Robins, S.	
16/1280	"	Robson, J.	
16/219	"	Robson, C.	
16/255	"	Rooney, N.	
16/1187	"	Rowell, J. N.	
16/108	"	Rowell, S.	
16/1430	"	Rowntree, R.	
16/46	"	Rutherford, A. T.	
16/983	"	Rutherford, T.	
16/79	"	Sanderson, J.	
16/173	"	Sanderson, J. T.	
16/190	"	Saunders, F. S.	
16/174	"	Sharpe, W.	
16/1180	"	Simpson, A. T.	
16/1192	"	Simms, G.	

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
16/175	Pte.	Simpson, G.	
16/159	"	Slaughter, E. J.	
16/48	"	Smith, D.	
16/100	"	Smith, C. K.	
16/1242	"	Snaith, G.	
16/160	"	Soulsby, J.	
16/1311	"	Stephens, J.	With East Yorks. Regt.
16/389	"	Stephenson, H.	
16/95	"	Suttie, G.	With 11th N.F. in Italy.
16/1254	"	Southern, T.	
16/51	"	Tait, G.	
16/1341	"	Tatham, A. R.	
16/145	"	Thomson, C. G.	
16/1484	"	Thompson, D.	
16/191	"	Thompson, G.	
16/36	"	Thompson, J. S.	
16/1094	"	Thompson, N. A.	
16/146	"	Thompson, R. S.	
16/33	"	Thorne, H.	
16/61	"	Todd, J. K.	
16/49	"	Todhunter, W.	
16/1201	"	Topham, J. P.	
16/81	"	Trotter, J.	
16/221	"	Troup, T.	
16/114	"	Turnbull, W.	
16/62	"	Wade, C.	
16/1269	"	Walton, E.	
16/885	"	Wardhaugh, S.	
16/1129	"	Warren, W.	
16/256	"	Watson, E.	Att. 11th N.F.
16/99	"	Watson, W.	
16/1468	"	Watson, W.	
16/209	"	Waugh, W. T.	
16/96	"	Wellford, T.	
16/1142	"	Westgarth, R.	
16/1199	"	Weston, W.	Trans. to 8th N.F.
16/1193	"	White, P.	Trans. to 14th N.F.
16/1166	"	Wilkinson, J. T.	
16/63	"	Wood, J. W.	

..

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
16/1266	Pte.	Wright, R. E.	
16/210	„	Young, J.	
16/113	„	Young, W.	
16/971	„	McEwan, W.	
16/30	„	Taylor, R.	

“ B ” COMPANY :

OFFICERS.	REMARKS.
Captain P. G. Graham , O.C. Captain V. Dunglinson , Second-in-Command. Lieut. L. B. Proctor , No. 5 Platoon.	Major; awarded M.C.
2nd-Lieut. R. McLean , No. 6 Platoon. Lieutenant W. Lunn , No. 7 Platoon.	Lieutenant. Captain; awarded M.C.
2nd-Lieut. E. H. Lucette , No. 8 Platoon.	Captain; awarded M.C.

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
16/456	R.Q.M.S.	Forster, G.	
16/451	C.S.M.	Robinson, J. L.	
16/416	C.Q.M.S.	Armstrong, H. S.	R.S.M.; awarded D.C.M.
16/305	Sergt.	Weldon, J.	C.S.M.; awarded D.C.M.
16/1077	„	Metcalf, W. H.	
16/521	„	Charlton, E.	
16/1089	„	Nockels, A.	
16/322	„	Robertson, G.	
16/419	„	Barnes, B. K.	2nd-Lt. att. 9th R.F.; awarded D.C.M.
16/411	„	Armstrong, H. E.	
16/269	„	Lithgow, C. C.	
16/316	„	Johnson, A. B.	T.M.B.
16/420	„	Summers, J. E.	

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
16/270	L/Sgt.	Gray, V.	Sergt. in R.E.
16/391	„	Robb, A. L.	
16/386	„	Moon, T. H.	
16/467	„	Southern, W.	
16/523	„	Smith, E.	
16/493	Corpl.	Sanderson, J.	
16/31	„	Wake, W. H.	
16/398	„	Young, T. B.	
16/342	„	Latham, T. E.	
16/312	„	Archer, J. G.	
16/268	„	Lowther, E.	
16/310	„	Anderson, J. M.	
16/393	„	Ballantyne, J.	
16/366	„	Price, H. E.	Sergeant
16/516	„	Stamp, J. N.	
16/509	L/Cpl.	Graham, J. W.	
16/400	„	Wait, R.	
16/307	„	Askew, J. W.	
16/471	„	Rutherford, R.	
16/1196	„	Scurfield, R. W.	
16/396	„	Black, T. C.	
16/435	„	Saunders, T.	
16/1256	„	Hills, J.	Sergeant.
16/360	„	Philip, M.	
16/457	„	Ferguson, J. R.	
16/291	„	Lacey, F. G.	
16/359	„	Bowmer, J. S.	
			2nd-Lieut. N.F.; awarded M.C.
16/356	„	Arkle, G. A.	Lieutenant N.F.
16/450	„	Iung, F. A.	
16/1312	„	Tait, H.	
16/1082	„	Potter, J.	
16/474	„	Dixon, R. G. M.	
16/519	„	Ross, D.	
16/303	„	Thorne, A.	
16/468	„	Walton, J. G.	
16/265	„	Murray, J. A. L.	
16/1298	Pte.	Airey, D.	
16/405	„	Aitchison, O.	
16/475	„	Allan, M.	Trans. 20th N.F.
16/430	„	Arthur, S.	

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
16/492	Pte.	Ascough, P.	
16/1366	,,	Ashton, R.	
16/876	,,	Brumpton.	
16/403	,,	Birkett, T.	
16/243	,,	Bartram, G. W.	
16/346	,,	Baldry, J.	
16/1088	,,	Balshaw, H.	
16/380	,,	Bell, D. J. C.	
16/1404	,,	Bell, J. W.	
16/1244	,,	Bell, R.	
16/1322	,,	Bishop, J.	
16/364	,,	Black, A.	Lt. 2nd D.L.I.
16/357	,,	Bowmer, G.	
16/441	,,	Brown, W. C.	
16/409	,,	Bell, S.	
16/447	,,	Bulmer, J.	
16/394	,,	Campbell, H.	
16/317	,,	Carling, M.	
16/264	,,	Carmichael, J. H.	
16/1295	,,	Carr, J.	
16/261	,,	Carruthers, R.	
16/1479	,,	Christian, E. G.	
16/500	,,	Cockerill, P. C.	
16/421	,,	Collingwood, A.	
16/414	,,	Cooper, R.	
16/333	,,	Corsie, S.	Trans. to 4th N.F.
16/318	,,	Cozens, A. H.	
16/334	,,	Cowing, T. B.	
16/1183	,,	Clark, J. R.	
16/460	,,	Darling, W. R.	
16/330	L/Cpl.	Davidson, T.	Trans. to 7th N.F.
16/1315	Pte.	Davis, J. R.	
16/1326	,,	Davidson, J. R.	
16/1227	,,	Dawson, G.	
16/1599	,,	Drury, P.	
16/1219	,,	Ducker, H.	
16/418	,,	Elliott, T.	Trans. M.G. Corps.
16/1281	L/Cpl.	Etheridge, W. T.	
16/1138	Pte.	Edwards, J.	
16/519	,,	Fairlam, J.	
16/404	,,	Fenwick, E. S.	

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
16/476	Pte.	Ferguson, G.	Corporal
16/413	"	Findlater, W.	
16/399	"	Fleeting, A.	
16/788	"	Foster, J.	
16/1217	"	Furness, J. J.	
16/1282	"	Gardner, A. W.	
16/469	"	Gibbon, F.	
16/422	"	Gibson, W. R.	
16/374	"	Gibson, J. A.	Lieut. 9th R.I.F. Died of wounds in Germany.
16/1294	"	Gibson, J. W.	Lieutenant N.F.; awarded M.C.
16/465	"	Gillender, J. G.	
16/1165	"	Grainger, P.	
16/363	"	Gray, J. M.	
16/395	"	Green, R. E.	
16/1314	"	Grenfell, H.	
16/1344	"	Gorrill, D. G. S.	
16/1332	"	Grundy, J.	
16/1333	"	Gustard, J. H.	
16/649	"	Gradon, W.	
16/429	"	Hall, A. H.	
16/354	"	Hardy, S.	
16/408	"	Harland, J.	
16/1243	"	Hayman, G.	
16/478	"	Hedley, G.	
16/1292	"	Henderson, A.	
16/439	"	Henry, C.	
16/434	"	Hinchley, H.	
16/436	"	Hillier, H.	
16/1186	"	Hodgson, A. H.	
16/280	"	Hodgson, A. N.	
16/379	"	Hogarth.	
16/343	"	Hogg, W. R.	
16/490	"	Holmes, C.	
16/323	"	Hood, P.	
16/288	"	Hudson, F. W.	
16/314	"	Huggett, P.	
16/415	"	Hume, T. W.	
16/287	"	Hutchinson, J. B.	

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
16/477	Pte.	Hutchinson, B. C.	
16/277	„	Hogg, W.	
16/121	„	Hymes, J.	
16/898	„	Heyworth, G.	
16/235	„	Ireland, J. C.	
16/1487	„	Isherwood, A.	
16/1102	„	Iung, C. E.	Sergeant.
16/424	„	Jackson, R.	With 5th N.F.
16/301	„	Jackson, H. C.	
16/420	„	Jenkins, J.	
16/1291	„	Johnson, T.	
16/462	„	Johnson, E.	Transferred to 32nd Divisional Signal Co.
16/1345	„	Jones, G.	
16/382	„	Kellie, W.	
16/369	„	Kemp, K.	
16/297	„	Kidson, T. P.	
16/381	„	Lemmon, J. H.	
16/344	„	Letch, J.	
16/427	„	Levene, L.	Sergt. 24th N.F.
16/285	„	Linton, F.	
16/308	„	Little, T.	
16/495	„	Low, A. V.	
16/1513	„	Lynch, W.	
16/1324	„	Lynn, J.	
16/440	„	McLoughlin, F. J.	
16/368	„	Mabon, T.	
16/458	„	Martin, F. A.	
16/328	„	Matthewson, J.	
16/337	„	Middlemas, J.	
16/1480	„	Mather, G.	
16/341	„	Moyle, F.	Posted to 5th N.F. P.O.W.
16/1263	„	Newton, H.	
16/1379	„	Newton, J. E.	
16/325	„	Nichol, S.	
16/499	„	Nicholson, J. M.	
16/503	„	Nixon, A.	
16/354	„	Noble, J.	
16/279	„	Noon, J.	

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
16/437	Pte.	Nunn, R.	
16/384	"	Patterson, G. E.	
16/1304	"	Patterson, J. K.	
16/1303	"	Patterson, E.	
16/1194	"	Pattinson, G.	
16/296	"	Peirson, R.	Corporal.
16/1334	"	Phillips, S.	
16/1224	"	Pigg, G. R.	
16/292	"	Pollett, J. R.	
16/321	"	Porritt, J. E.	Lieut. 5th N.F.
16/1343	"	Proud, P.	
16/205	"	Patterson, J. B.	
16/353	"	Richardson, P.	
16/324	"	Riddell, G.	
16/377	"	Ridley, W. P.	
16/313	"	Robertson, J.	
16/220	"	Robinson, J. B.	
16/392	"	Robson, D. M.	
16/1515	"	Reid, J.	
16/423	"	Robson, T. F.	With 4th York and Lancs.
16/1198	"	Robson, T.	
16/327	"	Rochester, W.	
16/271	"	Rodgers, G.	
16/1483	"	Ryle, E.	
16/1427	"	Robson, D. F.	
16/464	"	Savage, A. E. W.	
16/1476	"	Scurfield, S.	
16/491	"	Shiell, J.	
16/293	"	Shields, W.	
16/319	"	Simpson, G.	
16/446	"	Skelton, G. R.	
16/461	"	Smith, C. G.	
16/340	"	Smith, T. R.	
16/1325	"	Smith, J.	
16/1416	"	Smith, D.	
16/345	"	Snowden, T. W.	
16/1101	"	Stafford, W. E.	
16/390	"	Stephenson, W. T.	
16/455	"	Stephenson, J.	Awarded M.M.
16/1159	"	Storey, L.	

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
16/402	Pte.	Strickland, J.	Corporal.
16/295	„	Surtees, J. W.	
16/1486	„	Surtees, E.	
16/302	„	Symonds, W. T.	
16/496	„	Ternent, J.	
16/355	„	Thompson, A. B.	
16/472	„	Thompson, B.	
16/443	„	Thompson, C. M.	
16/309	„	Thompson, G. W.	
16/449	„	Thompson, T. H.	
16/442	„	Thomson, W. T.	
16/1172	„	Tiplady, R.	
16/375	„	Turnbull, R. M.	
16/1305	„	Tyson, T.	
16/1542	„	Twivey, H.	
16/50	„	Walker, H.	
16/336	„	Wagstaffe, E. H.	
16/453	„	Wake, C.	
16/433	„	Wallace, J.	
16/282	„	Walton, W. R.	
16/428	„	Watson, E.	
16/511	„	Wappett, W. P.	
16/274	„	Watson, N. O.	
16/1318	„	Webster, J.	
16/501	„	Williamson, H. J.	
16/816	„	Wilkin, W.	
16/376	„	Wilson, A.	
16/278	„	Wrightson, W. E.	
16/1202	„	Watson, W.	
16/1365	„	Wilson, S.	
16/113	„	Young, W.	
16/506	„	Bolam, J. R. H.	
16/1589	„	Renolds, J. J.	
16/1628	„	Lancaster, H.	
16/1679	„	Hutchinson, L.	
16/338	„	Bruce, J.	
16/259	Sergt.	Erskine, C. H.	C.Q.M.S. Records. Base.
16/130	Pte.	Young, W.	
16/275	„	Allen, N.	

" C " COMPANY :

OFFICERS.	REMARKS.
Captain D. Lindsay, O.C.	Major; awarded M.C.
Captain J. Harvey, Second-in-Command.	
Lieutenant G. T. Edwards, No. 9 Platoon.	
2nd-Lieut. W. E. Avery, No. 10 Platoon.	
2nd-Lieut. R. Reed, No. 11 Platoon.	Lieut.
Lieut. T. H. Wake, No. 12 Platoon.	Captain; awarded M.C.

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
16/572	C.S.M.	Savill, S. B. F.	Lieutenant N.F.
16/605	C.Q.M.S.	Grieve, F. W.	
16/769	Sergt.	Yarrow, C. A.	
16/725	"	Longworth, T. A. T.	
16/634	"	Pope, W. S.	
16/685	"	Jones, D. W.	
16/583	"	Ortton, J. G.	
16/680	"	Strike, A.	
16/684	"	Scott, J. E.	
16/620	"	Smith, M. O.	
16/766	L/Sergt.	Watson, G. P.	
16/64	"	Woodman, A. L.	
16/790	"	Buglass, N.	
16/631	"	Buchan, W.	
16/616	"	Barrass, G. E. S.	
16/652	"	Roberts, H.	
16/793	"	Emmerson, J. M.	
16/693	"	Wardle, T. H.	
16/624	"	Snowdon, R. H.	
16/552	Corporal	Cullen, H.	
16/615	"	Kelly, A. E.	
16/1083	"	Wall, T. D.	
16/541	"	Howard, W. C.	
16/916	"	Aspinwall, J.	
16/661	"	Erskine, A. J.	
16/586	"	Ellis, G. E.	
16/512	L/Cpl.	Armstrong, W.	
16/632	"	Mordue, E.	

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
16/728	L/Cpl.	Hildrop, D.	
16/771	,,	Johnson, C. S.	
16/682	,,	Allan, G. M.	
16/689	,,	Hewitson, R.	
16/697	Sergt.	Bell, W.	
16/582	L/Cpl.	Peart, R. W.	
16/1164	Pte.	Airley, J. L.	Lieut. 19th N.F.
16/646	,,	Aitchison, G.	
16/545	,,	Allen, G. E.	With 4th N.F.
16/736	,,	Alexander, A.	
16/1385	,,	Allison, J. W.	
16/698	,,	Anderson, R.	
16/532	,,	Atthey, N.	
16/1459	,,	Bain, W. H.	
16/1460	,,	Bain, E.	
16/626	,,	Bates, N.	
16/743	,,	Barber, H. W.	Attached 20th N.F.
16/675	,,	Bell, R. W.	
16/625	,,	Bickerton, G.	
16/573	,,	Black, J.	
16/549	,,	Blench, R. W.	
16/700	,,	Boggan, A.	
16/688	,,	Borrow, S.	
16/760	,,	Bulman, G. W.	
16/688	,,	Brown, T. H.	
16/890	,,	Bruce, J. A.	
16/741	,,	Byrne, T.	
16/1352	,,	Block, P.	
16/1218	,,	Brady, W.	
16/1442	,,	Brown, C. E.	
16/1057	,,	Bradshaw, R.	
16/1352	,,	Cain, J. W.	
16/1353	,,	Cain, N.	
16/569	,,	Cappelle, R.	
16/641	,,	Chrisp, L. C.	
16/602	,,	Clark, F.	
16/529	L/Cpl.	Cowie, E.	Transferred to 18th S.R.
16/1141	Pte.	Cookson, T.	
16/1220	,,	Coulson, J.	
16/644	,,	Clough, G. M.	

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
16/1320	Pte.	Charlton, J.	
16/629	"	Dixon, A. M.	
16/613	"	Dixon, W. S.	
16/636	"	Dixon, A. V.	
16/562	"	Dixon, R. W.	
16/1465	"	Dixon, A. E.	
16/1301	"	Dunwell, W.	
16/1433	"	Dobson, W. B.	
16/883	"	Dent, G.	
16/647	"	Eaton, W. D.	With 6th N.F.
16/712	"	Elliott, T. W.	Transferred to 25th N.F.; P.O.W.
16/742	L/Cpl.	Elliott, G.	
16/707	"	Ellis, R. W.	Lieut. R.A.F.
16/550	Pte.	Errington, W.	
16/709	"	Etherington, R. E.	
16/1352	"	Evans, J.	
16/756	"	Fallon, H.	
16/732	"	Fatherley, R. T.	
16/560	"	Fenwick, H.	
16/775	"	Forster, A.	
16/730	"	Forman, F.	
16/534	"	Forster, R. B.	
16/1338	"	Foy, C.	
16/762	"	French, N.	With Oxford & Bucks.
16/751	"	French, C. L.	
16/1387	"	Fletcher, J.	
16/701	"	Gordon, T. H.	Sergt.; M.M.
16/794	"	Gales, H. R.	
16/610	"	Gibson, J. T.	
16/1204	"	Gibson, W. H.	
16/548	"	Gilroy, J.	
16/761	"	Goddard, W.	
16/672	"	Graham, R.	
16/748	"	Graham, E.	
16/735	"	Gray, R.	
16/614	"	Greene, H. R.	
16/600	"	Haining, J.	
16/663	"	Hall, T. B.	Attached 6th N.F. Died P.O.W.

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
16/1472	Pte.	Harrison, T.	Posted to 9th Cheshire R.
16/1249	„	Harrison, R.	
16/759	„	Hastie, J. W.	
16/776	„	Henderson, I.	
16/589	„	Hetherington.	
16/664	„	Hill, T.	
16/791	„	Hindmarsh.	
16/727	„	Hodgson, R.	
16/655	„	Hodgson, G.	
16/1149	„	Hutchinson, C. H.	
16/1376	„	Hirst, W. H.	
16/1330	„	Hope, J.	
16/1446	„	Heddle, J.	
16/1147	„	Hindhaugh, J.	
16/1148	„	Hindhaugh, W.	
16/1155	„	Jackson, J.	
16/1342	„	Jackson, W.	
16/635	„	Johnson, T.	
16/694	„	Johnson, G.	
16/1389	„	Johnson, W.	
16/1211	„	Kelly, T.	
16/577	„	Kennedy, R.	
16/627	„	Kent, G.	
16/745	„	Kitching, H.	
16/1327	„	Knox, J.	
16/720	„	Lawson, J. B.	
16/686	„	Leach, F.	
16/795	„	Leach, J. C.	
16/721	„	Lee, J. W.	
16/1358	„	Lowson, E.	
16/1270	„	Longstaffe, R. W.	
16/769	„	Mason, J. R.	
16/650	„	Mawson, G. W.	
16/579	„	McConway, J.	
16/757	„	Melville, M.	
16/1089	„	Morley, S.	
16/601	„	Munro, F. H.	
16/1362	„	Moore, T.	
16/1321	„	Nesbit, F.	
16/729	„	Nesbit, J.	

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
16/45	Pte.	Nendick, H.	With 1st N.F.
16/658	„	Ogle, H. E.	
16/643	„	Oliver, T. R.	
16/1213	„	Park, J. A.	
16/595	„	Patterson, G. H.	
16/710	L/Cpl.	Payne, H.	
16/608	Corporal	Perrin, L.	
16/659	Pte.	Phillips, E.	
16/671	„	Pinder, T. S.	
16/559	„	Potts, J.	
16/1248	„	Puntin, N.	
16/669	„	Reay, W.	
16/1461	„	Pattison, J.	
16/1163	„	Randall, H.	
16/563	„	Rapley, J. A.	
16/609	„	Renton.	
16/1239	„	Reid, J. B.	
16/1340	„	Reid, F.	
16/1424	„	Roxby, J.	
16/748	„	Richardson, W.	
16/1115	„	Robinson, J. C.	
16/698	„	Robson, B. R.	
16/777	„	Robinson, E. J.	
16/716	„	Rothwell, R.	
16/540	„	Routledge, W.	
16/1186	„	Rowell, J.	
16/665	„	Rutherford, J.	
16/703	„	Rutherford, M.	
16/1137	„	Sherrington, W.	
16/749	„	Sanderson, E.	
16/584	„	Sanderson, R.	
16/684	„	Scott, G.	
16/653	„	Scott, W.	
16/1251	„	Stokoe, E.	
16/737	„	Shipley, R.	
16/1488	„	Shipley, C. R.	
16/733	„	Simpson, T.	
16/713	„	Smith, A. J.	
16/722	„	Smith, R.	
16/590	„	Smith, T.	
16/606	„	Smith, W.	

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
16/772	Pte.	Smith, C.	
16/773	,,	Stephenson, E.	
16/588	,,	Sutcliffe, S.	
16/1373	,,	Shaw, R. Y.	
16/1237	,,	Smith, G. W.	
16/1331	,,	Smith, J.	
16/1397	,,	Slater, G. W.	
16/747	,,	Taylor, W. W.	
16/1471	,,	Taylor, T.	
16/1349	,,	Teasdale, E.	
16/734	,,	Thompson, F. H.	
16/558	,,	Thompson, W.	
16/80	Corpl.	Thomson, J.	
16/670	Pte.	Tombling, W. E.	
16/695	,,	Turnbull, J.	
16/1391	,,	Turnbull, W.	
16/1392	,,	Tweddle, R.	
16/586	,,	Ternent, J.	
16/1418	,,	Thomlinson, W. J.	
16/782	,,	Vallance, A. J. B.	
16/637	,,	Walker, J. D.	
16/528	,,	Walker, N.	
16/702	,,	Wallace, R.	
16/656	,,	Waller, H. M.	
16/599	,,	Watson, F. N.	With 19th N.F.
16/598	,,	Webb, J. T.	
16/565	,,	West, G.	
16/1300	,,	West, J. W.	
16/789	,,	Wilkinson, W. E.	
16/738	,,	Winship, T.	
16/783	,,	Winter, W. W.	
16/1076	,,	Wright, J. W.	
16/1232	,,	Whitfield, H.	
16/1132	,,	Wylam, H.	
16/566	,,	Webb, S.	
16/1467	,,	Yorke, M.	
16/1845	,,	Goodwill, T.	
16/1698	,,	Prudhoe, R.	
16/1575	,,	Branfoot, G. S.	
16/1546	,,	Crawford, W.	
16/1846	,,	Jackson, J.	

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
16/1617	Pte.	Cookson, J.	Died in Germany.
16/1622	"	Angus, W.	
16/1522	"	Newby, R.	
16/1551	"	Best, R.	
16/1762	"	Wilkinson, W.	
16/1547	"	Anderson, S.	
16/1661	"	McHenry.	
16/1812	"	Crosby, T.	
16/1549	"	Forster, G. W.	
16/1426	"	Nicholson, J.	
16/1490	"	Martin, T.	
16/126	"	Patterson, G.	
16/103	"	Barrass, H.	
16/542	"	Young, J.	
16/862	"	Mayne, G. W.	
16/494	"	Storey, W. P.	
16/73	"	Green, G.	
16/1106	Sergt.	Graham, C.	
16/1129	Pte.	Norton, E. A.	
16/576	L/Cpl.	Simms, B.	
16/607	Pte.	Padgham, H. A.	Cpl. with 6th N.F.
16/263	"	Hunt, J.	With Yorkshire R.
16/1438	"	Brown, F.	
16/1466	"	Taylor, R.	

" D " COMPANY :

OFFICERS.			REMARKS.
Major A. Archer, O.C. Captain E. Thompson, Second-in-Command. Lieut. D. Irvin, No. 13 Platoon. Lieut. J. Southern, No. 14 Platoon. Lieut. C. E. Leach, No. 15 Platoon. 2nd-Lieut. J. Watson, No. 16 Platoon.			Major. To M.G.C. Captain.
No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
16/1064	C.S.M.	Harper, J.	R.Q.M.S. C.S.M.
16/1025	C.Q.M.S.	Nesbit, C.	
16/1009	Sergt.	Hebson, D.	

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
16/830	Sergt.	Curry, D.	C.S.M.; School of Instruction.
16/1031	"	Cameron, S.	
16/1027	"	Smith, D. W.	
16/947	"	Dodd, W.	Sergeant.
16/873	L/Sergt.	McStay, J.	
16/667	Sergt.	Smith, H. G.	
16/948	L/Sergt.	Hope, E. S.	2nd-Lieutenant 10th N.F.
16/918	"	McDonald, H.	
16/821	"	Patterson, K. S.	
16/1035	Corpl.	Howey, M.	Lieutenant 2nd York & Lancs.
16/880	"	Miller, N. J.	
16/926	"	Stewart, J.	
16/867	"	Whiteley, C. W.	
16/809	Sergt.	Watt, J.	2nd-Lieut. 5th L.F.
16/1020	L/Sergt.	Fawcett, J.	
16/988	Corpl.	Prior, G. H.	
16/968	L/Sergt.	Reay, R. C.	2nd-Lieut. 5th L.F.
16/909	Pte.	Akenhead, A. P.	
16/977	"	Anderson, T. A.	
16/841	"	Arnott, J.	
16/801	"	Atkinson, W.	
16/796	"	Ayton, A.	
16/919	"	Ayton, W.	
16/899	"	Anderson, J.	
16/1396	"	Armstrong, O.	
16/1440	"	Ainsley, T.	
16/802	"	Baxter, W.	
16/914	"	Borland, W. D.	
16/834	"	Beautyman, W.	
16/973	"	Bell, J. G.	
16/913	L/Cpl.	Birch, S. S.	
16/912	Pte.	Birch, J. W.	
16/953	L/Cpl.	Blackburn, J. W.	
16/1016	L/Cpl.	Bolton, J. W.	
16/976	Pte.	Boyce, E. G.	
16/837	"	Burdon, J. W.	
16/804	"	Burdon, J.	
16/1111	"	Butcher, A.	

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
16/960	Pte.	Burns, J.	
16/833	"	Bush, F. J. W.	
16/1013	"	Butler, M.	
16/884	"	Benson, C.	
16/1253	"	Bloomfield, G.	
16/1401	"	Best, J.	
16/1422	L/Cpl.	Brittain, W. D.	
16/1441	Pte.	Bell, R.	
16/1402	"	Brown, T.	
16/1351	"	Brown, J. R.	
16/810	L/Cpl.	Clark, P.	
16/915	Pte.	Clough, F. O.	
16/954	"	Charlton, W.	
16/868	"	Clark, W. M.	
16/807	"	Clark, A.	
16/1112	"	Clark, F. P.	Awarded D.C.M.
16/810	"	Clark, J.	
16/958	"	Collicott, R. M.	
16/836	"	Cowperthwaite, F.	
16/826	"	Cowley, A.	
16/927	"	Corner, W.	
16/967	"	Cox, F.	
16/1259	"	Clark, J.	
16/1431	"	Coulson, M.	
16/974	"	Daglish, T.	
16/1017	"	Downie, P.	
16/831	L/Cpl.	Donkin, J. G.	
16/1018	Pte.	Donkin, J.	
16/1124	"	Colling, J. H.	
16/1047	"	Duckworth, J.	
16/1190	"	Dawson, T.	
16/1229	"	Dawson, M.	
16/1122	"	Downie, W.	
16/839	"	Firth, E.	With 14th N.F.
16/881	"	Flintoff, J. R.	
16/1398	"	Featherstone, H.	
16/383	"	Frater, W.	
16/928	"	George, E. H.	2nd-Lieutenant.
16/1062	"	Gladstone, S.	
16/866	L/Cpl.	Gorman, A.	
16/940	Pte.	Graham, G. M.	With 1st N.F.

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
16/844	Pte.	Gray, W. J.	
16/825	„	Grant, A. E. W.	
16/1058	„	Gibson, A. S.	
16/1099	„	Gibson, J. R.	
16/1326	„	Graham, R. S.	
16/1049	L/Cpl.	Hall, J. A.	
16/814	„	Hanney, J. D.	
16/963	Pte.	Henderson, A. W.	Sergeant.
16/901	„	Henderson, A.	
16/903	„	Hepple, R.	Lieut. R.G.A.
16/1091	„	Hewitt, J. M.	
16/1447	„	Hood, W. H.	
16/780	„	Hobkirk, T. R.	
16/966	„	Humes, G.	
16/832	„	Hunter, W.	
16/1055	„	Heron, J.	
16/1259	„	Hutton, W.	Corporal.
16/1152	„	Haswell, A.	
16/1437	„	Harris, G.	
16/1178	„	Haughan, R.	
16/1139	„	Harding, C.	
16/1188	„	Helm, W.	
16/1432	„	Houston, E.	
16/1113	„	Irvine, H.	
16/1114	Corpl.	Irvine, W.	2nd-Lieutenant.
16/894	Pte.	Jackson, T.	
16/1046	„	Johnson, A.	
16/1061	„	Johnson, T. W.	
16/1410	„	Johnston, J.	
16/59	„	Johnson, N.	
16/846	„	Kirton, A.	
16/805	„	Lambert, R.	
16/829	„	Lowery, H. J.	
16/1021	„	Loadman, L. W.	2nd-Lieut. N.F.
16/929	„	Lennard, J. W.	
16/1421	„	Lilley, R.	
16/1449	„	Lamb, T.	
16/1010	„	Leach, V. S.	
16/931	„	Lynch, P.	
16/1262	„	Lish, H.	
16/1414	„	Lowdon, R.	

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
16/1411	Pte.	Ledger, R.	With 1/7th N.F.
16/1451	„	Lowden, H.	
16/	„	McKie, T.	
16/1063	L/Cpl.	McNall, T.	
16/1110	Pte.	McNair, J.	
16/1038	„	Matson, A.	
16/858	L/Cpl.	Moffitt, L. T.	
16/857	Pte.	Morrison, J.	
16/820	„	Mullord, H. S.	
16/1039	„	Murton, H. A.	
16/888	„	Maughan, A.	
16/1171	„	Moyes, D.	
16/1415	„	Marley, N.	
16/1457	„	Mason, B.	
16/686	L/Cpl.	Nesbitt, A.	
16/949	L/Sergt.	Nicholson, R. N.	
16/1131	Pte.	Norton, W.	
16/919	„	O'Kelly, E.	
16/984	„	Oliver, J. W.	
16/1040	„	Paton, A.	
16/1094	„	Patterson, E.	
16/1041	„	Petrie, F. H.	
16/868	„	Pestlethwaite, G.	
16/985	L/Cpl.	Potts, A.	
16/1452	Pte.	Pattison, R.	
16/1175	„	Probert, R.	
16/920	„	Raffles, J. W.	
16/951	„	Reid, J.	
16/1350	„	Stephenson, W.	
16/294	„	Renwick, W.	
16/972	„	Reid, A.	
16/1130	„	Richardson, G.	
16/221	„	Romenis, J.	
16/1042	„	Rood, G. H.	
16/864	„	Rowntree.	
16/811	„	Robson, J.	
16/847	L/Cpl.	Robinson, R.	
16/1407	Pte.	Robson, F. J.	
16/1414	„	Ritson, W. P.	
16/1400	„	Roberts, T.	
16/1455	„	Richardson, R.	

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
16/239	Pte.	Ridley, F. W.	
16/1433	,,	Ross, C. F.	
16/1025	,,	Scott, H.	
16/695	,,	Scott, N.	
16/1043	L/Cpl.	Shearer, J.	
16/941	,,	Simon, W. G.	
16/1399	,,	Suggett, C.	
16/896	Pte.	Sinclair, J. F.	
16/891	,,	Smith, J. P.	
16/1098	,,	Spence, R. N.	
16/987	,,	Spoors, T.	
16/1044	,,	Stainthorpe, H.	
16/234	,,	Spencer, W.	
16/1153	,,	Stewart, A.	
16/965	,,	Stewart, R.	
16/937	,,	Stewart, T.	
16/865	,,	Summer, H.	
16/1413	,,	Spence, H.	
16/935	,,	Sanderson, R. W.	
16/799	,,	Taylor, W.	
16/854	L/Cpl.	Taylor, W.	
16/969	Pte.	Tarbet.	Sergt. R.A.M.C.
16/1059	,,	Thompson, N. J.	
16/859	,,	Tibbs, T.	2nd-Lieut. 4th N.F.
16/645	,,	Trevis.	
16/798	L/Cpl.	Turner, J.	
16/1028	,,	Turton, C. F.	
16/848	,,	Turnbull, S.	
16/904	Pte.	Tunnah, A.	
16/1029	,,	Thirlwell, J. W.	
16/299	,,	Townsley, G. E.	
16/1420	,,	Tweeddale, T. F.	
16/1408	,,	Temperley, W.	
16/691	,,	Thompson, J. M.	
16/952	L/Cpl.	Verrill, W.	2nd-Lieut. 3rd N.F.
16/997	Pte.	Wake, G. N.	
16/1030	,,	Walker, J.	Missing with 4th N.F.
16/939	,,	Watts, W. A.	Trans. to R.E.
16/872	L/Cpl.	Waugh, C.	
16/803	Pte.	Wearmouth, A. N.	

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
16/910	Pte.	Westgarth, S. H.	
16/1109	„	While, H. P.	
16/828	Corpl.	Whiting, J.	
16/964	Pte.	Windrum, W.	
16/877	„	Wright, J.	
16/1143	„	Wade, A.	
16/1429	„	Wilson, S.	
16/1393	„	Walton, J.	
16/1200	„	Young, C. W.	
16/284	„	Jameson, J.	
16/998	„	Main, A.	
16/992	„	Lynch, D.	
16/1500	L/Sergt.	Mordue, H.	
16/1703	Sergt.	Mallet, C. B.	
16/1037	Pte.	Martin, J.	
16/1497	„	Downie, N.	
16/1189	„	Cant, J.	
16/1329	„	Brannigan, A.	
16/1501	„	Morpeth, A.	
16/1494	„	Mills, F.	
16/1499	„	Marsh, W.	
16/1436	„	Maddison, H.	
16/1456	„	Turnbull, G.	
16/1530	„	Stobbart, A. R.	
16/1371	„	Hopper, R. V.	
16/955	„	Histon, A. W.	
16/1495	„	Leeman, A.	
16/1520	„	Ord, T.	
16/1535	„	Smith, J.	
16/1620	„	Hopper, S.	
16/1498	„	Saddington, T.	
16/1502	„	Hood, A.	
16/1434	„	Soley, T. R.	
16/1348	„	Willis, J.	
16/1517	„	Scott, C.	
16/1297	„	Longstaff, H.	
16/1539	„	Jobes, R.	
16/849	„	Lowes, J. W.	
16/522	„	Hamilton.	
16/135	„	Edmundson, F. H.	
16/692	„	Hepple, C.	

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
16/1526	Pte.	Humble, J.	
16/674	,,	Lawrenson.	
16/27	,,	Purvis, A.	
16/1000	,,	Tuck.	
16/1037	,,	Martin.	

ROLL OF OFFICERS, N.C.O.'s and MEN

at BATTLE OF THIEPVAL, 1st JULY, 1916

HEADQUARTERS :

In Command : Lieutenant-Colonel W. H. Ritson, C.M.G., V.D.
 Acting Second-in-Command : Major A. Archer
 Adjutant : Captain R. H. Worthington
 Lewis Gun Officer : Lieutenant W. Lunn
 Intelligence : Second-Lieutenant E. H. Lucette
 Bombing Officer : Lieutenant W. B. Brown
 Traffic Control : Lieutenant C. W. Porter
 Traffic Control : Lieutenant C. E. Leach
 Medical Officer : Captain W. T. Hare, R.A.M.C.
 Transport Officer : Lieutenant G. T. Edwards

" A " COMPANY :

Captain A. C. Young, O.C., killed

No. 1 PLATOON :

Lieutenant T. McIntyre, Commander, killed

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
16/47	Sergt.	A. H. Simpson	Killed
1482	Corpl.	H. Bowman	Wounded
5	"	D. Dunglinson	Killed
476	"	R. Hirst	Wounded
4	L/Cpl.	P. J. Curry	Killed
25	"	R. Hetherington	Killed
42	"	J. Kirkley	Wounded
12	"	R. P. Todd	Killed
1308	"	T. Owens	
16	Pte.	R. Armstrong	Wounded
18	"	A. Blake	Killed
36	"	J. R. Brewis	Wounded

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
1680	Pte.	H. Ball	Wounded
28/340	"	R. Black	Wounded
28/304	"	A. Butters	Wounded
28/22	"	J. W. Baxter	Killed
55	"	G. Chreseson	Wounded
1238	"	J. Colling	Wounded
37	"	S. Davison	Wounded
1428	"	A. Dickson	
1382	"	C. Dyson	
1359	"	J. McAninly	Killed
1495	"	T. McKinney	Wounded
43	"	A. P. Martin	Died of wounds
1507	"	J. Neilson	
1485	"	R. Pattison	Killed
46	"	A. Rutherford	Wounded
51	"	G. Tait	Killed
1341	"	A. Tatham	
1484	"	D. Thompson	Wounded
33	"	H. Thorne	Killed
221	"	T. Troup	Wounded
30	"	R. Taylor	Killed
955	"	A. Histon	
28/145	"	W. Carse	
1221	"	T. Moon	
703	"	M. Rutherford	
24	"	E. Gleason	Killed
38	"	J. Douglas	Wounded
1201	"	J. Topham	
1357	"	J. Harle	Killed
58440	"	McLellan	Wounded
4887	R.S.M.	A. Hollett	

No. 2 PLATOON:

Second-Lieutenant W. E. Avery, Commander, killed

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
7	Sergt.	J. Hall	Killed
88	Corpl.	A. Dodds	Killed
92	"	Matthewson	Wounded

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
118	L/Cpl.	W. Embleton	Wounded
76	"	W. Laws	Wounded
110	"	J. R. Scott	Wounded
111	"	H. Smyth	Killed
125	"	Nicholson	Wounded
98	"	Watson	
72	Pte.	J. Clark	Killed
105	"	W. Dobson	Wounded
1347	"	J. Donnison	Killed
119	"	V. Gledhill	Wounded
1120	"	A. R. Hardy	
122	"	L. Harris	
75	"	A. M. Herriott	Killed
93	"	J. S. Longstaff	
1571	"	Harrison	
78	"	E. Metcalf	Wounded
1405	"	E. Pettigrew	
115	"	S. Pickering	Killed
83	"	F. Price	Wounded
97	"	A. Ramsay	Wounded
1187	"	J. N. Rowell	Killed
1430	"	R. Rowntree	Killed
79	"	J. Sanderson	
95	"	G. Suttie	Wounded
1129	"	W. Warren	Wounded
99	"	W. Watson	
28/129	"	Bingham	Wounded
28/115	"	J. Cumminsky	Killed
1469	"	Cartwright	
62	"	C. Wade	Wounded
1135	"	F. Brown	Wounded
1145	"	D. Metcalf	Killed
80	"	Thompson	
1092	"	R. W. Embleton	
1192	"	Simms	
773	"	E. Stephenson	
102	"	N. A. Askeland	
539	"	S. McConway	Wounded
114	"	W. Turnbull	Wounded
191	"	G. Thompson	Wounded
1374	"	E. S. Chambers	

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
882	Pte.	Wardhaugh	Wounded
800	„	Harris	
20	„	Capstaff	

No. 3 PLATOON:

16/571 Sergeant W. Mair, Commander, killed

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
53	Sergt.	T. Leach	Killed
161	„	R. Todd	
168	„	D. W. King	
1084	Corpl.	J. Cashman	Killed
197	„	B. Carr	
1272	„	J. Affleck	
184	L/Cpl.	C. Gordon	Wounded
153	„	A. E. Hewitt	Wounded
1491	„	J. W. Standen	Killed
177	„	Williamson	Wounded
163	Pte.	A. Aisbitt	
164	„	H. E. Allon	
1140	„	A. Bates	Wounded
133	„	F. M. Bruce	Killed
165	„	R. S. Bruce	Wounded
192	„	W. Corbett	Wounded
1354	„	J. R. Craggs	Wounded
152	„	R. J. Davidson	Died of wounds
1146	„	A. Kendall	Killed
1425	„	R. Little	Wounded
142	„	F. Mason	Wounded
143	„	J. Maxton	
1367	„	J. Morton	
190	„	F. S. Saunders	Killed
174	„	W. D. Sharpe	
1266	„	R. E. Wright	
971	„	W. McEwan	Killed
28/369	„	T. Gibson	Wounded
28/346	„	R. K. Dove	Wounded
1242	„	G. Snaith	Wounded

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
159	Pte.	E. J. Slaughter	
1198	„	T. Robson	
172	„	H. Pollard	Wounded
131	„	S. Blair	Wounded
151	„	E. A. Cockburn	Killed
169	„	J. Levy	
1492	„	W. Bell	
145	„	C. G. Thompson	

No. 4 PLATOON :

Second-Lieutenant J. A. Milligan, Commander, wounded

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
226	Sergt.	R. Noble	Killed
962	„	W. H. Viner	Wounded
233	„	Hargreaves	
218	Corpl.	D. Jones	
240	„	J. C. Thompson	Wounded
232	„	Hall	
228	L/Cpl.	G. Bulman	
217	„	G. F. Heads	Wounded
250	„	R. Irving	Wounded
204	„	J. A. Pearson	Killed
234	„	S. Henderson	
199	Pte.	J. W. Charlton	
244	„	F. Clasper	Killed
1123	„	J. C. Dickinson	
212	„	G. Dodgson	Wounded
213	„	W. Eaglesham	
247	„	J. D. Forster	Wounded
248	„	H. Gall	Wounded
1388	„	J. S. Graham	Killed
215	„	J. E. Harker	Killed
251	„	T. Liddle	Wounded
1203	„	J. McMillan	Wounded
238	„	W. R. Peary	Killed
1214	„	J. E. Purvis	Wounded
253	„	W. Raine	Wounded

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
254	Pte.	G. Richardson	Wounded
1180	„	A. T. Simpson	
256	„	E. Watson	Killed
1138	„	J. S. Wilkinson	Wounded
210	„	J. Young	
1683	„	J. Clarke	Wounded
1645	„	J. Borthwick	
1290	„	J. Armstrong	Wounded
1030	„	J. Walker	
822	„	M. Charlton	Wounded
1275	„	J. W. Hawkins	
196	„	F. Audas	Wounded
216	„	S. E. Hattle	Wounded
209	„	W. T. Waugh	
237	„	T. R. Morrison	

“ B ” COMPANY :

Captain P. G. Graham, O.C., killed

No. 5 PLATOON :

16/322 Sergeant G. Robertson, Commander, killed

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
268	Corpl.	E. Lowther	Wounded
28/59	„	J. Johnstone	Killed
435	L/Cpl.	T. Saunders	Wounded
1256	„	J. Hills	
1281	„	W. Etheridge	Killed
307	Pte.	J. Askew	Killed
31/44	„	W. Cummings	Killed
264	„	J. H. Carmichael	
261	„	R. Carruthers	Wounded
1227	„	G. Dawson	Wounded
1315	„	J. Davis	Killed
788	„	J. Foster	
1282	„	A. Gardner	Killed
323	„	P. Hood	Killed

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
1697	Pte.	L. H. Hutchinson	Wounded
1243	„	G. Hayman	Wounded
1291	„	T. Johnson	Killed
297	„	T. P. Kidson	Killed
308	„	T. Little	Wounded
1513	„	W. Lynch	Killed
1369	„	E. Leck	Wounded
437	„	R. Nunn	Killed
1343	„	P. Proud	Killed
313	„	J. Robertson	Killed
271	„	G. Rodgers	Wounded
293	„	W. Shields	
302	„	W. Symonds	Killed
1486	„	E. A. Surtees	
1172	„	R. Tiplady	Killed
279	„	J. Noon	Wounded
317	„	M. Carling	Wounded
1380	„	J. Robson	Killed
1284	„	T. Southern	
28/77	„	G. Cookson	Wounded
1088	„	H. Balshaw	
1345	„	G. Jones	
292	„	J. R. Pollitt	Wounded
321	„	J. E. Porritt	
1101	„	W. Stafford	Wounded
319	„	G. Simpson	
318	„	A. H. Cozens	
295	„	J. W. Surtees	Wounded

No. 6 PLATOON :

16/305 Sergeant J. Weldon, D.C.M., Commander

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
269	Sergt.	C. C. Lithgow	Killed
386	L/Sergt.	T. H. Moon	Killed
310	Corpl.	J. M. Anderson	Wounded
31	„	W. H. Wake	Killed
356	L/Cpl.	G. Arkle	Wounded

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
360	L/Cpl.	M. Phillip	Wounded
359	"	J. S. Bowmer	
330	"	T. Davidson	Wounded
584	"	R. Sanderson	
198	"	T. Bolam	
357	Pte.	G. Bowmer	Wounded
1318	"	J. Webster	Wounded
336	"	E. Wagstaffe	
28/91	"	R. Moran	Killed
1332	"	J. Grundy	Killed
377	"	W. P. Ridley	Wounded
340	"	T. R. Smith	Wounded
375	"	R. M. Turnbull	
1194	"	G. Pattinson	
380	"	D. J. C. Bell	
1598	"	J. J. Reynolds	Wounded
381	"	J. H. Lemmon	Wounded
1728	"	R. Hopson	Killed
1632	"	W. Davey	Wounded
1633	"	J. G. Matthews	Wounded
1524	"	D. Henry	
382	"	W. Kellie	Killed
333	"	S. Corsie	
325	"	S. Nichol	Wounded
28/48	"	J. Hutchinson	
121	"	J. Hymes	
364	"	A. Black	
368	"	T. Mabon	
430	"	S. Arthur	
428	"	E. Watson	
288	"	F. Hudson	
443	"	C. M. Thompson	Wounded
1190	"	T. Dawson	
328	"	J. R. Matthewson	

No. 7 PLATOON:

Second-Lieutenant H. Oliver, Commander, wounded

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
419	Sergt.	B. K. Barnes	Wounded
1675	"	D. Hall	
393	Corpl.	J. Ballantyne	Killed
342	"	T. Latham	
493	"	J. Sanderson	
400	L/Cpl.	R. Wait	Wounded
28/355	"	J. Robson	Killed
31/133	"	G. Hartshorn	Wounded
450	"	F. A. Iung	
455	"	J. Stephenson	
471	"	R. Rutherford	
451	C.S.M.	J. L. Robinson	Wounded
422	Pte.	W. R. Gibson	Wounded
427	"	L. Levene	Wounded
1102	"	C. Iung	
424	"	R. Jackson	
436	"	H. Hillier	
392	"	D. M. Robson	Wounded
1325	"	J. Smith	
1314	"	H. Grenfell	Wounded
442	"	W. Thompson	
399	"	A. Fleeting	
1720	"	R. Parker	Wounded
28/330	"	R. Lowerson	Wounded
1161	"	R. Craigie	
306	"	F. White	Killed
374	"	J. A. Gibson	Wounded
449	"	T. H. Thompson	
106	"	F. Girling	Wounded
476	"	G. Ferguson	
1344	"	D. Gorrill	Wounded
287	"	J. B. Hutchinson	Wounded
415	"	T. W. Hume	Wounded
31/1	"	H. Winn	
113	"	W. Young	Killed
441	"	W. C. Brown	Wounded
394	"	H. Campbell	

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
418	Pte.	T. Elliott	Wounded
395	"	R. E. Green	Killed
440	"	F. McLoughlin	
1326	"	J. R. Davidson	
434	"	H. Hinchley	Wounded
421	"	A. Collingwood	Killed
405	"	O. Aitchison	Died of wounds
501	"	H. J. Williamson	
130	"	W. Young	
205	"	J. B. Pattison	

No. 8 PLATOON:

Lieutenant R. W. Falconer, Commander, killed

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
411	Sergt.	H. E. Armstrong	Killed
523	"	E. Smith	Wounded
516	Corpl.	J. N. Stamp	Killed
366	"	H. E. Price	
474	L/Cpl.	R. G. M. Dixon	Killed
519	"	D. Ross	
457	"	J. R. Ferguson	
1183	Pte.	J. Clark	Wounded
472	"	B. Thompson	
491	"	J. Shiel	
28/40	"	W. J. Hills	Wounded
146	"	D. Smith	
1479	"	E. G. Christian	Killed
235	"	J. C. Ireland	Killed
1263	"	H. Newton	Killed
1487	"	A. Isherwood	Wounded
1165	"	P. Grainger	
519	"	J. Fairlam	
1651	"	J. Philipson	Killed
1628	"	H. Lancaster	Died of wounds
1366	"	R. Ashton	Wounded
28/56	"	T. Hart	
1483	"	E. Ryle	

Historical Records of the

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
461	Pte.	C. G. Smith	Killed
496	"	J. Ternent	
475	"	M. Allen	Wounded
1295	"	J. Carr	Killed
469	"	F. Gibbon	
1224	"	G. R. Pigg	Wounded
503	"	A. Nixon	
1186	"	A. Hodgson	
71	"	J. Noble	
538	"	E. Purvis	
499	"	J. M. Nicholson	
490	"	C. Holmes	Wounded
243	"	W. Bartram	
649	"	W. Graydon	

" C " COMPANY:

Captain E. Thompson, O.C.

Second-Lieutenant H. F. White, Second-in-Command

No. 9 PLATOON:

Second-Lieutenant M. G. Klean, Commander, killed

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
572	C.S.M.	S. Savill	
684	Sergt.	J. E. Scott	
790	L/Sergt.	N. Buglass	Killed
56	Corpl.	J. R. Dewing	
552	"	H. Cullen	Wounded
1397	L/Cpl.	G. Slater	
28/360	"	W. Weller	Killed
1352	Pte.	J. Evans	Killed
1163	"	H. Randall	Wounded
1137	"	W. Sherrington	
545	"	G. E. Allen	
1155	"	J. Jackson	Wounded
573	"	J. Black	
549	"	R. Blench	Wounded
550	"	W. Errington	

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
548	Pte.	J. Gilroy	
1362	„	T. Moore	
590	„	T. Smith	Wounded
1149	„	C. H. Hutchinson	
1551	„	R. Best	
569	„	R. L. Capelle	Wounded
528	„	N. Walker	
1352	„	P. Block	
1301	„	W. Dunwell	
577	„	R. W. Kennedy	
1452	„	R. Patterson	Wounded
1749	„	R. L. Cariss	
31/8	„	J. L. Kidd	
28/79	„	T. Watkin	Wounded
28/398	„	J. Watkin	
890	„	J. A. Bruce	Killed
534	„	R. B. Foster	Killed
776	„	I. Henderson	Killed
588	„	S. Sutcliffe	Killed
1547	„	S. Anderson	Wounded
1846	„	J. Jackson	
1438	„	F. Brown	
344	„	J. Letch	Wounded
969	„	C. H. Tarbett	Wounded
1199	„	W. Weston	

No. 10 PLATOON:

Second-Lieutenant R. H. Smallwood, Commander

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
685	Sergt.	D. W. Jones	
1106	„	C. Graham	
586	Corpl.	G. E. Ellis	
28/1328	L/Cpl.	A. Scarfe	
632	„	E. Mordue	
682	„	G. M. Allen	Wounded
641	Pte.	L. C. Crisp	Wounded

L

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
883	Pte.	G. Dent	
629	"	A. M. Dixon	Wounded
655	"	G. Hodgson	Wounded
595	"	G. H. Patterson	
1734	"	M. Bunting	Wounded
367	"	B. Tateson	Wounded
602	"	F. Clark	Wounded
1472	"	T. Harrison	
600	"	J. Haining	
601	"	F. H. Munroe	
606	"	W. Smith	
625	"	G. Bickerton	Wounded
1248	"	N. Puntin	Wounded
648	"	G. Scott	Wounded
653	"	W. Scott	Wounded
598	"	J. T. Webb	
1575	"	G. S. Branfoot	
28/366	"	C. H. Peart	
1460	"	E. Bain	
614	"	H. R. Green	
1186	"	J. Rowell	Killed
1471	"	T. Taylor	Wounded
1349	"	E. Teasdale	
1589	"	J. Robertson	
1649	"	G. Smith	
1107	"	J. Anderson	
31/76	"	J. Ash	
	"	R. Bullmore	
586	"	J. Ternent	Died of wounds
688	"	T. H. Brown	Wounded
1164	"	J. Airley	
607	"	H. Padgham	
647	"	W. D. Eaton	
1204	"	W. H. Gibson	
1461	"	J. Pattison	
626	"	N. Bates	

No. 11 PLATOON:

16/719 Sergeant C. A. Yarrow, Commander, wounded

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
624	Sergt.	R. Snowdon	
64	L/Sergt.	A. L. Woodman	Wounded
793	"	J. Emmerson	Wounded
661	Corpl.	A. Erskine	Killed
670	"	W. Tombling	Killed
689	L/Cpl.	B. Hewitson	Wounded
707	"	B. W. Ellis	Wounded
728	"	D. Hilldrop	Wounded
1331	"	J. W. Smith	
710	"	H. Payne	Wounded
698	Pte.	B. Anderson	
688	"	S. Borrow	
700	"	A. Boggan	Wounded
1141	"	T. Cookson	Wounded
1546	"	W. Crawford	Wounded
709	"	R. E. Etherington	
712	"	T. W. Elliott	Wounded
701	"	T. H. Gordon	
1845	"	T. Goodwill	Killed
1698	"	R. Prudhoe	
663	"	T. B. Hall	Wounded
664	"	T. Hill	Wounded
1330	"	J. Hope	Killed
1249	"	R. Harrison	Wounded
1327	"	J. Knox	
1089	"	S. Morley	Wounded
1321	"	F. Nesbitt	
658	"	H. E. Ogle	Wounded
671	"	T. S. Pinder	
659	"	E. Phillips	
669	"	W. Reay	
665	"	J. Rutherford	Wounded
1237	"	G. W. Smith	Wounded
1466	"	R. Taylor	Wounded
1076	"	J. W. Wright	Killed
1762	"	W. Wilkinson	Wounded
1467	"	M. Yorke	Wounded
542	"	J. Young	

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
28/52	Pte.	H. Ratcliffe	Wounded
12/20884	„	J. Nesbitt	
694	„	G. C. Johnson	
695	„	J. Turnbull	
1549	„	G. W. Foster	

No. 12 PLATOON :

16/634 Sergeant W. S. Pope, Commander, wounded

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
693	L/Sergt.	T. H. Wardle	Killed
631	„	W. Buchan	Killed
1083	Corpl.	T. D. Wall	Wounded
916	„	J. Aspinwall	Wounded
771	L/Cpl.	C. S. Johnson	
772	„	C. Smith	
742	„	G. Elliott	Killed
1631	„	J. Swanston	Killed
736	Pte.	A. Alexander	Died of wounds
1385	„	J. Allison	Died of wounds
743	„	H. W. Barber	
1442	„	C. E. Brown	
760	„	G. W. Bulman	Wounded
741	„	T. Byrne	Wounded
1629	„	J. Davidson	
732	„	R. T. Fatherley	
751	„	C. L. French	Killed
730	„	F. Forman	Wounded
748	„	E. Graham	Died of wounds
794	„	H. R. Gales	Killed
735	„	R. Gray	Died of wounds
761	„	W. Goddard	
1376	„	W. H. Hirst	
727	„	R. Hodgson	Wounded
745	„	H. Kitching	
720	„	J. B. Lawson	
795	„	J. C. Leach	
729	„	J. Nesbit	

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
849	Pte.	J. V. Lowes	Killed
28/365	"	W. Rendall	Wounded
1424	"	J. Roxby	
1239	"	J. B. Reid	
746	"	W. Richardson	Wounded
733	"	T. Simpson	Wounded
722	"	R. Smith	Wounded
1418	"	W. J. Thomlinson	
789	"	W. E. Wilkinson	Killed
783	"	W. Winter	Wounded

" D " COMPANY :

Lieutenant L. B. Proctor, O.C., wounded

No. 13 PLATOON :

Second-Lieutenant F. H. Worthington, Commander, wounded

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
968	L/Sergt.	R. C. Reay	Wounded
798	Corpl.	J. Turner	
810	L/Cpl.	P. Clark	Killed
831	"	G. Donkin	Wounded
1421	"	R. Lilley	Killed
1058	"	A. Gibson	Wounded
1399	"	C. Suggett	
1449	"	T. Lamb	
945	"	McVicker	
882	"	N. Walton	Killed
1440	Pte.	T. Ainsley	Wounded
796	"	A. Ayton	Killed
834	"	W. Beautyman	
409	"	S. Bell	
837	"	W. Burdon	
1189	"	J. Cant	Wounded
807	"	A. Clark	
135	"	F. H. Edmundson	Wounded
1398	"	H. Featherstone	Wounded

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
1062	Pte.	S. Gladstone	Killed
825	"	J. Grant	
1326	"	R. S. Graham	Wounded
1091	"	J. M. Hewitt	Died of wounds
1502	"	A. Hood	Wounded
832	"	W. Hunter	Wounded
1432	"	E. Houston	Wounded
929	"	J. M. Lennard	Killed
805	"	R. Lambert	Wounded
820	"	H. Mullord	
1110	"	J. McNair	
1175	"	R. Probert	
28/23	"	F. Pritchard	Wounded
1407	"	F. Robson	
28/3	"	P. Robson	
887	"	J. Slater	
1434	"	R. Soley	Wounded
1153	"	A. Stewart	Wounded
799	"	W. Taylor	Killed
1456	"	G. Turnbull	
803	"	A. Wearmouth	
1429	"	S. Wilson	
1013	"	M. Butler	Killed
833	"	F. Bush	
826	"	A. Cowley	
1059	"	N. J. Thompson	

No. 14 PLATOON:

Second-Lieutenant H. White, Commander, wounded

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
1064	C.S.M.	J. Harper	Died of wounds
947	Sergt.	W. F. Dodd	Wounded
821	L/Sergt.	K. S. Patterson	
1114	Corpl.	W. M. Irvine	
858	L/Cpl.	T. Moffitt	
886	"	J. Nesbit	
854	"	W. Taylor	

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
859	L/Cpl.	T. Tibbs	Wounded
872	"	C. Waugh	
909	Pte.	P. Akenhead	
899	"	J. Anderson	
441	"	R. Bell	
1402	"	T. Brown	Wounded
1329	"	A. Brannigan	
927	"	W. Corner	
1259	"	J. Clark	
1122	"	W. Downie	
383	"	W. S. Frater	Wounded
901	"	A. Henderson	
1371	"	R. V. Hopper	
1620	"	S. Hopper	
1113	"	M. H. Irvine	
1410	"	J. Johnston	Wounded
846	"	A. Kirton	
1451	"	H. Lowden	
857	"	J. Morrison	
888	"	A. Maughan	
1415	"	N. Marley	Wounded
864	"	Rowntree	
1414	"	W. P. Ritson	
239	"	F. W. Ridley.	
865	"	H. Summer	
910	"	S. Westgarth	Wounded
877	"	J. Wright	
876	"	J. Brumpton	

No. 15 PLATOON:

16/949 Sergeant R. W. Nicholson, Commander, wounded

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
162	L/Sergt.	W. B. Turnbull	Died of wounds
926	Corpl.	J. Stewart	
928	L/Cpl.	E. H. George	
913	"	S. S. Birch	
953	"	J. W. Blackburn	

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
1063	L/Cpl.	T. McNall	Wounded
941	"	W. G. Simon	Killed
952	"	W. G. Verrill	
1200	"	C. Young	
1396	Pte.	O. Armstrong	Wounded
977	"	T. W. Anderson	
1218	"	W. Brady	Wounded
960	"	J. Burns	
1253	"	G. Bloomfield	Wounded
976	"	E. G. Boyce	
912	"	J. Birch	
914	"	W. D. Borland	
1725	"	H. Boyle	Wounded
967	"	F. Cox	
1124	"	T. Collins	Killed
954	"	W. Charlton	Wounded
974	"	T. Daglish	Wounded
1497	"	N. Downie	
1229	"	M. Dawson	
940	"	G. M. Graham	
963	"	W. A. Henderson	
1152	"	A. Haswell	
1061	"	T. W. Johnson	
1414	"	R. Lowdon	
931	"	P. Lynch	Wounded
1171	"	D. Moyes	
1131	"	W. Norton	
951	"	J. Reid	
920	"	J. W. Raffle	Wounded
1517	"	C. Scott	
1535	"	J. Smith	
1498	"	T. Saddington	
937	"	T. Stewart	
935	"	R. W. Sanderson	
691	"	M. Thompson	
1420	"	T. F. Tweedale	
939	"	W. A. Watts	
964	"	W. F. Winderim	
1495	"	A. Leeman	

No. 16 PLATOON:

Second-Lieutenant T. Robinson, Commander, wounded

No.	RANK.	NAME.	REMARKS.
1031	Sergt.	S. Cameron	
1009	"	D. Hebson	
1020	L/Sergt.	J. Fawcett	Wounded
1035	Corpl.	M. Howey	Wounded
988	"	G. H. Prior	Wounded
985	L/Cpl.	A. Potts	
1043	"	J. Shearer	
1422	"	W. D. Brittain	Killed
1021	"	W. Loadman	
1017	Pte.	P. Downie	Killed
1041	"	F. Petrie	
1047	"	J. Duckworth	
1038	"	A. Matson	
1539	"	R. Jobes	
1499	"	W. Marsh	
1348	"	J. Willis	
1494	"	F. Mills	Wounded
998	"	A. Main	Wounded
987	"	T. Spoors	Wounded
1029	"	J. Thirlwell	Wounded
1040	"	A. Paton	
1044	"	H. Stainthorpe	Killed
1350	"	W. Stevenson	
1297	"	H. Longstaffe	
1436	"	H. Maddison	Wounded
1042	"	G. Rood	
294	"	W. R. Renwick	
1393	"	J. Walton	
1037	"	J. Martin	
1130	"	G. Richardson	
1010	"	V. Leach	
674	"	Lawrenson	
1025	"	H. Scott	Wounded
992	"	D. Lynch	Wounded
997	"	G. N. Wake	Wounded
1143	"	Wade	Wounded
200	"	A. Elliott	

The following officers also served with the battalion:

Major J. Talbot.	
„ T. P. A. Rose.	
„ F. J. Cheverton.	Lieut.-Colonel.
„ C. F. Mayos.	Awarded M.C.
„ L. Permain.	
Captain A. S. O'Brien.	Major 27th N.F.
„ G. S. Waller.	
„ J. H. Rose.	
„ C. N. Dodd.	
„ W. G. Kinghorn.	6th West Riding Regt.
„ P. Barry Jones.	
„ H. G. Steel.	10th N.F.; awarded M.C. and bar.
„ J. Huntley.	
„ W. Ramsay.	Awarded M.C.
„ F. H. White.	
„ E. C. Thornycroft.	Awarded M.C.
„ J. A. Park.	Attached from 1st Devons.
„ H. G. King.	Awarded M.C.
„ W. Smith.	
„ W. A. Goss.	
„ F. Dawson.	6th N.F.; awarded M.C.
„ T. W. Gregory.	4th N.F.
Lieutenant R. A. J. Berry.	Captain.
„ G. H. Phillips.	Captain.
„ J. de C. S. Paynter.	Captain.
„ A. A. Johnson.	Major 96th Inf. Bde. Staff; awarded O.B.E.
„ R. Johnstone.	
„ B. H. Smallwood.	
„ W. B. Brown.	
„ M. G. Klean.	
„ T. McIntyre.	
„ H. Oliver.	
„ F. H. Worthington.	
„ H. White.	
„ H. Serginson.	Awarded M.C.
„ T. Robinson.	
„ Weston Ramsay.	Attached from 1st Bedfords.
„ A. M. Fenn.	

Lieutenant C. W. Purchase.

„	J. H. Green.	
„	Sutherland Brown.	
„	W. Harris.	
„	R. E. M. Finlayson.	
„	C. Pierrepont.	
„	R. C. Mills.	
„	L. Steedman.	
„	R. Fair.	
„	E. W. King.	Lieut. Indian Army.
„	E. W. Pyle.	
„	S. Beazley.	Awarded M.C.
„	A. E. Tanner.	
„	N. Futers.	
„	F. Siddeley.	Awarded M.C.
„	T. Baird.	Awarded M.C.
„	Whittingham.	
„	W. Hamilton.	
„	Wheeldon.	
„	M. R. Rutherford.	
„	J. B. Brown.	
„	E. C. Lingwood.	
„	T. A. Crofts.	
„	A. L. Harden.	
„	H. Taylor.	
„	H. Allinson.	Awarded M.C.
„	J. Smallwood.	
„	C. S. Sutherland.	Awarded M.C.
„	A. Williamson.	
„	L. Townsend.	
„	S. J. Henderson.	Awarded M.C.
„	F. W. Ridley.	
„	T. W. Thompson.	Awarded M.C.
„	W. R. Slack.	
„	A. Watts.	
„	J. H. Faulder.	
„	D. Davison.	
„	J. H. Brownrigg.	Awarded M.C.
„	W. Hutton.	
„	W. O. Smart.	
„	J. Bolam.	Attached M.G.C. ; awarded M.C.
„	F. Akester.	

172 16th (Service) Battalion Northumberland Fusiliers

2nd.-Lieut.	C. V. Potts.	Captain.
"	H. S. Barnes.	Lieut., 1st N.F.
"	H. F. Laird.	Captain, M.G.C.
"	D. Irvin.	Captain, Indian Army.
"	D. Hall.	
"	W. P. Simm.	Captain, 10th N.F.
"	R. S. Watson.	
"	J. H. Adams.	Captain, Tyneside Scottish.
"	N. Lunn.	Major, 27th N.F. ;
		awarded M.C.
"	R. G. Helsby.	18th N.F.
"	M. Young.	
"	R. W. M. Davies.	
"	B. Collier.	
"	O. Thomas.	
"	G. M. Popple.	
"	C. F. O. Whickham.	
"	F. N. Coates.	
"	R. J. Berry.	
"	F. R. Collins.	
"	M. Peyton.	
"	L. Mann.	
"	F. C. Arnaud.	
"	W. Dinning.	
"	R. A. Lamarque.	
"	G. M. Waggott.	
"	J. Stephenson.	
"	L. R. Chevrant.	
"	E. H. Gowdy.	
"	H. A. Dodd.	
"	T. Ramsay.	
"	W. H. J. Markham.	
"	T. McIntosh.	

ROLL OF HONOUR

16th (S.) BATTALION NORTHUMBERLAND FUSILIERS

This Roll commemorates those who, at the call of King and Country, left all that was dear to them, endured hardness, faced danger, and finally passed out of sight of men by the path of duty and self-sacrifice, giving up their own lives that others might live in freedom.

LET THOSE WHO COME AFTER SEE TO IT
THAT THEIR NAMES BE NOT FORGOTTEN

Officers and other ranks who have been killed in action, or died from wounds received in action, or other causes:

Major R. B. Pritchard, D.S.O., M.C.	Captain H. G. King, M.C. (with 4th N.F.).
Captain A. C. Young.	Captain T. W. Gregory (with 4th N.F.).
Captain P. G. Graham.	Captain H. C. Mulkern, R.A.M.C.
Lieut. J. McIntyre.	Lieut. G. F. Golightly (with 19th D.L.I.).
Lieut. A. E. Tanner.	Lieut. G. B. Logan (with Scot- tish Rifles).
Lieut. R. W. Falconer.	Lieut. W. D. Maughan (with 17th N.F.).
Lieut. H. Serginson, M.C.	Lieut. W. W. Wilkin (with 5th N.F.).
2nd-Lieut. W. E. Avery.	Lieut. J. A. Gibson (with 9th R.I.F.).
2nd-Lieut. M. G. Klean.	Lieut. H. S. Barnes (with 1st N.F.).
2nd-Lieut. A. Park.	Lieut. Peters (with Tyneside Scottish).
2nd-Lieut. G. M. Popple.	Lieut. N. Futers (with 1st N.F.).
2nd-Lieut. K. Saunders.	Lieut. R. H. Smallwood (with 8th N.F.).
2nd-Lieut. C. F. O. Whickham.	2nd-Lieut. L. L. Tocher (with 20th N.F.).
2nd-Lieut. F. R. Collings.	
2nd-Lieut. L. Mann.	
2nd-Lieut. F. C. Arnaud.	
2nd-Lieut. Wheeldon.	
2nd-Lieut. M. Peyton.	
2nd-Lieut. J. Stephenson.	
Captain G. R. Foster (with 19th D.L.I.).	
Captain R. Falkous (with 27th N.F.).	
Captain J. Huntley.	

2nd-Lieut. W. D. Brittain, D.C.M. (att. 9th R.F.).	2nd-Lieut. A. B. Cosgrove (with 22nd N.F.).
2nd-Lieut. J. A. Black (with 2nd D.L.I.).	2nd-Lieut. F. N. Coates (with 22nd N.F.).
2nd-Lieut. W. G. Verrill (with 4th N.F.).	2nd-Lieut. W. Dunglinson (with 1st N.F.).
2nd-Lieut. W. B. Moore (with 22nd N.F.).	2nd-Lieut. B. Collier.
2nd-Lieut. B. K. Barnes, D.C.M. (att. 9th R.F.).	2nd-Lieut. R. W. M. Davies (with R.F.C.).
2nd-Lieut. F. C. Phillips (with 5th N.F.).	2nd-Lieut. G. M. Waggott (with 6th N.F.).
2nd-Lieut. J. E. Porritt (with 5th N.F.).	2nd-Lieut. L. R. Chevrn (with 4th N.F.).
2nd-Lieut. T. Tibbs (with 4th N.F.).	2nd-Lieut. W. N. J. Markham (with 5th N.F.).
Lieut. G. R. Brown (with 18th N.F.).	2nd-Lieut. T. McIntosh (with 5th N.F.).
Lieut. C. W. Whiteley (with 2nd Yorks and Lances).	2nd-Lieut. K. S. Patterson (with R.F.A.).

194 Sergt. A. Angus.	89 Pte. J. R. Bolam.
919 Pte. W. Ayton.	133 Pte. F. M. Bruce.
312 Cpl. J. G. Archer.	890 Pte. J. A. Bruce.
405 Pte. O. Aitchison.	790 Sergt. N. Buglass.
736 Pte. A. Alexander.	743 Pte. H. W. Barber (att. 20th N.F.).
1272 Cpl. J. Affleck.	136 Pte. Wm. Brown (att. T.M.B.).
796 Pte. A. Ayton.	1441 L/Cpl. Robson Bell.
411 Sergt. H. E. Arm- strong.	228 Sergt. Gilbert Bulman.
475 Pte. M. W. Allan (att. 20th N.F.).	393 Cpl. Jas. Ballantyne.
307 Pte. John Wm. Askew.	604 L/Cpl. R. Broderick (att. 8th N.F.).
492 Pte. Phillip Ascough.	1516 Pte. John R. Barrie (att. 1st N.F.).
545 Pte. G. E. Allen (att. 4th N.F.).	1438 Pte. F. Brown (att. Yorks).
631 L/Sergt. Wm. Buchan.	71 Pte. J. Harold Ball (att. 24/27th N.F.).
1459 Pte. W. H. Bain.	834 Pte. Wm. Beautyman.
1244 Pte. R. Bell.	1295 Pte. J. Carr.
1351 Pte. J. Brown.	1479 Pte. E. G. Christian.
18 Pte. A. W. Blake.	
1013 Pte. M. Butler.	
1761 Pte. J. W. Burke.	

- | | |
|---|---|
| <p>1124 Pte. T. H. Colling.
 197 Cpl. Ben Carr.
 244 Pte. F. Clasper.
 334 Pte. T. B. Cowing.
 810 L/Cpl. Clarke.
 72 Pte. John Clark.
 394 Pte. H. Campbell.
 4 L/Cpl. P. J. Curry.
 151 Pte. E. A. Cockburn.
 421 Pte. A. Collingwood.
 181 Pte. A. F. Cook (att.
 9th Cheshires).
 1602 Pte. E. J. Carr (att.
 K.O.Y.L.I.).
 286 Cpl. Harry Chaston,
 M.S.M. (att. 16th
 Lancs).
 593 Sergt. H. N. Chapman.
 807 Pte. A. E. Clark.
 1469 Pte. J. J. Cartwright
 (att. 9th N.F.).
 5 Cpl. Dan Dunlinson.
 636 Pte. A. V. Dixon.
 152 Pte. R. J. Davidson.
 1326 Pte. J. R. Davidson.
 996 Pte. A. M. Donkin
 (att. 9th N.F.).
 1433 Pte. Wm. B. Dobson.
 981 Pte. J. Wm. Denton
 (att. 2nd N.F.).
 1190 Pte. Thos. Dawson.
 245 Pte. Francis Devine
 (att. 6th Yorks).
 1025 Pte. Jas. Dickinson
 (att. 7th B.F.).
 330 Cpl. T. Davidson (att.
 1/7th N.F.).
 88 Cpl. A. A. Dodds
 (better known as
 Collingwood).
 1315 Pte. J. R. S. Davis.
 1347 Pte. Jas. Donnison.
 1017 Pte. Philip Downie.</p> | <p>474 L/Cpl. R. G. M.
 Dixon.
 1138 Pte. J. Edwards.
 742 L/Cpl. G. Elliott.
 661 Cpl. A. Erakine.
 550 Pte. W. Errington.
 1758 Pte. G. W. Edwards
 (att. 13th N.F.).
 1092 Pte. R. W. Embleton,
 M.M. (att. 4th
 N.F.).
 647 Pte. W. D. Eaton
 (att. 6th N.F.).
 1355 Pte. Jas. Evans.
 534 Pte. R. B. Foster.
 756 Pte. H. Fallon.
 247 Pte. J. D. Forster (att.
 11th N.F.).
 Pte. Jas. Fitzpatrick
 (from T.I.).
 1549 Pte. Geo. W. Foster.
 839 Pte. Ernest Firth (att.
 14th N.F.).
 751 Pte. C. L. French.
 762 Pte. Norman French
 (att. Oxford and
 Bucks Regt.).
 1282 Pte. A. W. Gardner.
 866 L/Cpl. A. Gorman.
 363 Pte. J. M. Gray.
 748 Pte. E. Graham.
 761 Pte. W. Goddard.
 1332 Pte. J. Grundy.
 1388 Pte. J. S. Graham.
 1062 Pte. S. Gladstone.
 940 Pte. Geo. M. Graham
 (att. 1st N.F.).
 201 Pte. Jas. D. Gristwood
 (trans. 1st N.F.).
 230 Pte. J. M. Graham
 (M.G. Section).
 119 Cpl. W. Vernon Gled-
 hill (att. 22nd N.F.).</p> |
|---|---|

- | | |
|---|--|
| 395 Pte. Ralph Ed. Green. | 424 Pte. Randolph Jackson (att. 5th N.F.). |
| 794 Pte. H. R. Gales. | 382 Pte. W. Kellie. |
| 24 Pte. E. Gleason. | 1146 Pte. A. Kendall. |
| 1845 Pte. T. Goodwill. | 269 Sergt. C. C. Lithgow. |
| 75 Pte. A. M. Herriott. | 1628 Pte. H. Lancaster. |
| 1446 Pte. J. E. B. Heddle. | 358 Pte. T. Lowson. |
| 1714 Pte. J. R. Hepple. | 1513 Pte. W. Lynch. |
| 1064 C.S.M. J. Harper. | 931 Pte. Peter Lynch. |
| 7 Sergt. J. Hall. | 929 Pte. Jos. Marlow Len-
nard. |
| 1091 Pte. J. M. Hewitt. | 829 Pte. Arthur Jos.
Lowrey. |
| 776 Pte. Irving Henderson. | 849 Pte. J. V. Lowes. |
| 215 Pte. J. E. Harker. | 1421 L/Cpl. Robt. Lilley. |
| 1357 Pte. J. Harle. | 1297 Pte. Hutton Long-
staffe. |
| 25 L/Cpl. R. Hethering-
ton. | 1359 Pte. J. McAninly. |
| 1376 Pte. W. H. Hirst. | 43 Pte. A. P. Martin. |
| 323 Pte. P. Hood. | 971 Pte. W. McEwan. |
| 1120 Pte. Arthur R. Hardy
(13th Entrenching
Batt.). | 1110 Pte. J. A. McNair. |
| 840 Pte. G. S. Hartshorn
(att. 4th N.F.). | 858 L/Cpl. T. Moffett. |
| 963 Sergt. Wallace A.
Henderson. | 1362 Pte. T. Moore. |
| 989 Pte. Geo. Heyworth
(149th Depot R.S.). | 571 Sergt. W. Mair. |
| 1004 Pte. Robert Hall (att.
11th N.F.). | 368 L/Cpl. T. Mabon. |
| 385 Cpl. F. Hanretty (2nd
Army School Mus.). | 769 Pte. J. R. Mason. |
| 663 Pte. T. B. Hall (att.
6th N.F.). | 1145 Pte. D. Metcalf. |
| 767 C.Q.M.S. T. Hood. | 862 Pte. Geo. W. Mayne,
(att. 1/6th N.F.). |
| 728 L/Cpl. D. Hilldrop
(att. 3rd N.F.). | 60 Pte. Thos. L. Marshall
(trans. 1st N.F.). |
| 1728 Pte. R. Hopson. | 1490 Pte. Thos. Martin
(12/13th N.F.). |
| 1330 Pte. Jas. Hope. | 1799 Pte. F. Mitchelson. |
| 235 Pte. J. C. Ireland. | 1863 Pte. J. Melville (att.
Tyneside Scottish). |
| 894 Pte. T. Jackson. | 91 Pte. Robt. Jos. Moran |
| Pte. Ed. Jobling. | 386 L/Sergt. T. H. Moon. |
| 1291 Pte. T. Johnson. | 1816 Pte. Robt. Martin. |
| 635 Pte. T. H. Johnson. | 1158 Pte. W. McClennan,
(att. R.E.). |
| 627 Pte. G. Kent. | 437 Pte. R. Nunn. |
| | L/Cpl. F. S. Nesbitt. |

- | | |
|--|---|
| <p>1379 Pte. John E. Newton,
(att. 20th N.F.).</p> <p>1263 Pte. Henry Newton.
226 Sergt. R. Noble.</p> <p>1522 Pte. R. Newby.</p> <p>1131 Pte. W. Norton.
643 L/Cpl. T. Oliver.
238 Pte. W. R. Peary.</p> <p>1485 Pte. R. B. Pattinson.</p> <p>1082 L/Cpl. J. Potter.</p> <p>1343 Pte. Percy Proud.
985 L/Sergt. A. L. Potts.</p> <p>1461 Pte. J. F. Pattison.
204 L/Cpl. J. A. Pearson.
115 Pte. S. Pickering.</p> <p>1175 Pte. Blackett Probert
(att. 1st/7th N.F.).</p> <p>607 Cpl. H. A. Padgham
(att. 6th N.F.).</p> <p>205 Pte. J. B. Pattison
(att. 1st/5th N.F.).</p> <p>659 Pte. Ernest Phillips
(att. 1st N.F.).</p> <p>1783 Pte. J. Patrickson,
M.M. (att. 11th
N.F.).</p> <p>1651 Pte. J. Philipson.</p> <p>313 Pte. J. Robertson.</p> <p>391 L/Sergt. A. L. Robb.</p> <p>219 Pte. C. Robson.</p> <p>353 Pte. P. Richardson.</p> <p>696 Pte. B. R. Robson.</p> <p>1407 Pte. F. J. Robson.</p> <p>777 Pte. E. J. Robinson.</p> <p>1085 Pte. S. Robins.</p> <p>1529 Pte. J. Robertson.</p> <p>1187 Pte. J. N. Rowell.
322 Sergt. G. Robertson.</p> <p>1380 Pte. Jos. Robson.</p> <p>647 Pte. P. G. Ramsey (att.
1st/4th K.O.Y.L.I.).</p> <p>724 Sergt. J. R. Robson
(att. 13th D.L.I.)</p> | <p>423 Pte. T. F. Robson (att.
2nd/4th York &
Lancs).</p> <p>1430 Pte. R. Rowntree.</p> <p>1186 Pte. J. Rowell.</p> <p>459 Pte. J. R. Robson (att.
W. Yorks).</p> <p>1598 Pte. J. J. Reynolds
(att. 4th N.F.).</p> <p>1631 L/Cpl. J. Swanston.</p> <p>461 Pte. C. G. Smith.
48 Pte. B. Smith.</p> <p>965 Pte. R. Stewart.</p> <p>160 Pte. J. Soulsby.
576 L/Cpl. B. Simms.</p> <p>1413 Pte. J. Spence.</p> <p>1137 Pte. J. Sherrington
28 Pte. Henry Smith.</p> <p>1350 Pte. W. Stevenson.</p> <p>1399 L/Cpl. C. Suggett.
174 Pte. W. Sharp.</p> <p>1491 L/Cpl. J. W. Standen.</p> <p>111 L/Cpl. H. R. Smyth.
47 Sergt. A. H. Simpson.</p> <p>887 Pte. J. Slater (att.
4th N.F.).</p> <p>204 Pte. W. Simpson (att.
2nd/4th K.O.Y.L.I.).</p> <p>1280 L/Cpl. J. Smith.</p> <p>1043 Sergt. J. A. Shearer.</p> <p>1311 Pte. J. Stephens (att.
E. Yorks).</p> <p>431 Pte. Walker A. Suther-
land (att. Gordons).</p> <p>1044 Pte. H. Stainthorpe.</p> <p>941 L/Cpl. W. G. Simon.</p> <p>772 L/Cpl. C. Smith.</p> <p>302 Pte. W. T. Symonds.</p> <p>516 Cpl. J. N. Stamp.</p> <p>588 Pte. Stanfield Sutcliffe.</p> <p>1172 Pte. R. Tiplady.</p> <p>161 Pte. J. R. Todd.</p> <p>496 Pte. J. Ternent.</p> |
|--|---|

- | | |
|---|---|
| <p>586 Pte J. Ternent.
 30 Pte. Ralph Taylor.
 375 Pte. R. M. Turnbull.
 917 Pte J. Tandy.
 51 Pte. Geo. Tait.
 12 L/Cpl. H. G. Todd.
 670 Cpl. W. Tombling.
 162 L/Sergt. Wm. Bell
 Turnbull.
 1378 Cpl. Edwin Thompson
 (att. 1st N.F.).
 1247 Cpl. W. C. Thompson.
 161 Sergt. R. Todd.
 1639 Pte. F. Taylor.
 33 Pte. H. Thorne.
 799 Pte. W. Taylor.
 96 Pte. T. Hylton Wel-
 ford (first fatal
 casualty).
 306 Pte. F. White.
 882 L/Cpl. N. Walton.
 274 Pte. N. O. Watson.
 566 Pte. S. Webb.
 828 Cpl. J. H. Whiting.
 1719 L/Cpl. Ed. Wilson.
 789 Pte. W. E. Wilkinson.
 31 Cpl. W. H. Wake.
 1676 Pte. J. W. Wright.
 256 Pte. Ernest Watson
 (att. 11th N.F.).
 599 Pte. F. N. Watson,
 M.M. (att. 19th
 N.F.).
 676 Pte. W. G. Wright
 (att. 1st/5th Essex
 Regt.).
 256 Pte. E. Watson.
 693 L/Sergt. T. H. Wardle.
 305 C.S.M. J. Weldon,
 D.C.M.
 702 Pte. R. Wallace.
 433 Pte. J. Wallace (att.
 5th N.F.).</p> | <p>797 Pte. J. Young.
 1467 Pte. M. York (att.
 27th N.F.).
 113 Pte. W. Young.
 1030 Pte. J. Walker.
 19276 Sergt. N. Anderson.
 32266 Pte. W. Aspey.
 44776 Pte. B. Buck.
 28/5009 L/Cpl. C. Bacon.
 41593 Pte. H. Booker.
 44938 Pte. J. A. Bentley.
 285005 Pte. W. Bell.
 285006 Pte. H. A. C. Blyde.
 28/86 Pte. M. Box (att. W.
 Yorks).
 28/22 Pte. J. W. Baxter.
 7270 Cpl. A. Blackburn
 (from 11th N.F.).
 19333 Pte. R. Cowans.
 28/115 Pte. J. Cumminsky.
 34296 Pte. N. Coates.
 40510 Pte. J. Chilvers.
 31/44 Pte. W. Cummings.
 34250 Pte. A. W. Dicks.
 40547 Pte. F. Hird.
 19400 Pte. G. Howe.
 40391 Pte. Hancock.
 29048 Pte. A. L. Healey.
 28/64 Pte. Chas. T. Howes
 (att. 6th N.F.).
 34259 Pte. W. Jackson.
 28/59 Cpl. J. P. Johnson.
 28/117 Pte. J. W. Kellie (att.
 1st/6th N.F.).
 40561 Pte. F. W. Lee.
 40564 Pte. R. B. Lonsdale.
 40410 Pte. E. Lascelles.
 40407 Pte. A. Lamb.
 28/5036 Pte. J. A. Lancaster.
 28/315 Pte. Blayney Moore.
 14666 Pte. C. M. Milford.
 16623 Pte. P. May.
 40353 Cpl. J. A. Maddox.</p> |
|---|---|

- | | |
|--------------------------|--------------------------------|
| 34338 Pte. T. Moir. | 297 Pte. T. P. Kidson. |
| 25/1406 Pte. G. Mariner. | 1159 Pte. L. Storey. |
| 34263 Pte. F. Maidens. | 701 Sergt. T. H. Gordon. |
| 28/182 Pte. W. Morris. | 40433 Pte. J. Spence. |
| 3704 Pte. J. Nicholson. | 40382 Pte. J. H. Spooner. |
| 31/28 Pte. N. Nicholson. | 45566 Pte. Scott. |
| 40479 Pte. J. E. Parker. | 28/361 Pte. Jas. Stanger (att. |
| 34266 Pte. T. A. Parker. | K.O.Y.L.I.). |
| 28/207 Pte. R. Robinson. | 28/58 Pte. Thos. Stephenson |
| 40484 Cpl. Redshaw. | (att. 12th/13th N.F.). |
| 33518 Pte. J. G. Robson. | 27772 Pte. H. Thornton. |
| 28/355 L/Cpl. J. Robson. | 34271 Pte. C. N. Taylor. |
| 34808 Pte. T. L. Robson. | 40436 Pte. G. Taylor. |
| 28/365 Pte. Wm. Rendall | 6966 Pte. E. Toy. |
| (att. 9th Ches. R.) | 27/1285 Pte. J. Talbot. |
| 41763 Pte. W. Summer- | 45441 Pte. B. Taylor. |
| scales. | 28/360 L/Cpl. W. Weller. |
| 34328 Pte. F. Scott. | 12/1348 Pte. J. Willis. |
| 169 Pte. J. Levy. | 14627 Pte. Wm. Wilson. |
| 1281 L/Cpl. W. T. Ether- | 14802 L/Cpl. J. Yeales. |
| idge. | 24/538 Pte. C. Yallop. |
| 462 Pte. E. Johnson. | 1256 Sergt. J. Hills. |

THE 32nd DIVISION :

1915, 1916, 1918

32ND DIVISION: NOVEMBER 1915.

Commander : MAJOR-GENERAL W. H. RYCROFT, C.B., C.M.G., *p.s.c.*

95TH INFANTRY BRIGADE.

Commander : BRIGADIER-GEN. C. R. BALLARD, C.B., C.M.G. *p.s.c.*

14th Batt. Warwicks Regt.	16th Batt. Warwicks Regt.
15th Batt. Warwicks Regt.	12th Batt. Gloucester Regt.

96TH INFANTRY BRIGADE.

Commander : BRIGADIER-GENERAL C. YATMAN, C.M.G., D.S.O.

16th Batt. Northumberland Fus.	16th Batt. Lancashire Fus.
15th Batt. Lancashire Fus.	19th Batt. Lancashire Fus.

97TH INFANTRY BRIGADE.

Commander : BRIGADIER-GENERAL JARDINE, C.M.G., D.S.O.

11th Batt. Border Regt.	16th Batt. H.L.I.
15th Batt. H.L.I.	17th Batt. H.L.I.

PIONEER BATTALION.

17th Batt. Northumberland Fus. (Colonel Pears).

32ND DIVISION: JULY 1ST, 1916.

Commander : MAJ.-GEN. SIR W. H. RYCROFT, K.C.M.G., C.B., *p.s.c.*

14TH INFANTRY BRIGADE.

Commander : BRIGADIER-GENERAL C. W. COMPTON, C.B., C.M.G.

19th Batt. Lancashire Fus.	2nd Batt. Manchester Regt.
1st Batt. Dorset Regt.	15th Batt. H.L.I.

96TH INFANTRY BRIGADE.

Commander: BRIGADIER-GENERAL C. YATMAN, C.M.G., D.S.O.
16th Batt. Northumberland Fus. 16th Batt. Lancashire Fus.
15th Batt. Lancashire Fus. 2nd Batt. R. Inniskilling Fus.

97TH INFANTRY BRIGADE.

Commander: BRIGADIER-GENERAL JARDINE, C.M.G., D.S.O.
11th Batt. Border Regt. 16th Batt. H.L.I.
2nd Batt. K.O.Y.L.I. 17th Batt. H.L.I.

PIONEER BATTALION.

17th Northumberland Fusiliers.

32ND DIVISION: FEBRUARY, 1918.

Commander: MAJ.-GEN. SIR C. D. SHUTE, K.C.B., K.C.M.G., *p.s.c.*

14TH INFANTRY BRIGADE.

Commander: BRIGADIER-GENERAL LUMSDEN, V.C., D.S.O.
5/6th Batt. Royal Scots. 2nd Batt. Manchesters.
1st Batt. Dorsets. 15th Batt. H.L.I.

96TH INFANTRY BRIGADE.

Commander: BRIG.-GEN. A. C. GIRDWOOD, C.M.G., D.S.O., *p.s.c.*
16th Batt. Northumberland Fus. 16th Batt. Lancashire Fus.
15th Batt. Lancashire Fus. 2nd Batt. R. Inniskilling Fus.

97TH INFANTRY BRIGADE.

Commander: BRIG.-GEN. C. A. BLACKLOCK, C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O.
11th Batt. Border Regt. 16th Batt. H.L.I.
2nd Batt. K.O.Y.L.I. 17th Batt. H.L.I.

16th Northumberland Fusiliers and 17th H.L.I. were disbanded
7th February, 1918. 2nd Royal Inniskilling Fusiliers transferred
to 16th Division at same time.

HONOURS AND AWARDS

LIST OF HONOURS AWARDED TO OFFICERS AND
OTHER RANKS WHO HAVE SERVED WITH THE
16TH (SERVICE) BATTALION NORTHUMBERLAND
FUSILIERS.

*Commander, Most Distinguished Order of St Michael
and St George.*

Lieutenant-Colonel W. H. Ritson, V.D.

Distinguished Service Order.

Major R. B. Pritchard, M.C. (with 24th N.F.).

Major A. W. Muir, M.C. (and Bar) (with 2nd N.F.).

Order of British Empire (Military Division).

Major A. A. Johnson.

Captain G. Nesbit, M.C.

Military Cross.

Major R. B. Pritchard, D.S.O.,
(with 24th N.F.).

Capt. W. Ramsay.

Capt. E. C. Thornycroft.

Major L. B. Proctor.

Captain H. G. King.

Major C. F. Mayos.

Capt. T. W. Hare, R.A.M.C.

Major N. Lunn (with 27th N.F.).

Capt. H. G. Steel; Bar to M.C.

Major A. W. Muir, D.S.O. (M.C.

(with 10th N.F.).

with 19th N.F.; Bar with
2nd N.F.).

Capt. H. S. Holbrooke; Bar to
M.C. (with 18th N.F.).

Major R. B. Rutherford,
R.A.M.C.

Lieut. J. Bolam (with M.G.C.).

Lieut. S. Beazley.

Major D. Lindsay.

Lieut. H. Serginson (T.M.B.).

Capt. R. H. Worthington.

Lieut. F. Siddeley.

Capt. J. G. Kirkup.

Lieut. T. Baird.

Capt. E. H. Lucette.

Lieut. T. S. Sutherland.

Capt. G. Nesbit, O.B.E.

Lieut. J. H. Brownrigg.

Capt. W. Lunn.

Lieut. J. L. Young.

Capt. T. H. Wake.

Lieut. D. G. S. Gorrell.	2nd-Lieut. H. Bambrough (with
Lieut. S. J. Henderson (with	R.G.A.).
M.G.C.).	2nd-Lieut. H. C. McDonald
Lieut. H. Allinson.	(with 10th N.F.).
2nd-Lieut. E. Capstaff (with	
R.G.A.).	2nd-Lieut. J. S. Bowmer.

Distinguished Conduct Medal.

R.S.M. H. Armstrong.	2nd-Lieut. W. D. Brittain (att.
C.S.M. J. Weldon.	9th R.F.).
Lieut. B. K. Barnes.	1112 L/Cpl. F. P. Clarke (96th
	T.M.B.).

Military Medal.

Lieut. H. V. Bonner.	16/455 Cpl. J. Stephenson.
Sergt. J. Bolton (from 8th	L/Cpl. H. Burnham.
N.F.).	16/599 Pte. F. N. Watson (with
16/701 Sergt. T. A. Gordon.	19th N.F.).
16/123 Sergt. B. Jackson (with	Pte. J. Turner.
10th N.F.).	16/1092 Pte. R. W. Embleton.

Meritorious Service Medal.

16/286 Cpl. H. Chaston (with	Sergeant W. Bell.
16th Lancs. Fus.).	

Mentioned in Despatches.

Lieut.-Col. W. H. Ritson,	Capt. J. H. Adams.
C.M.G., V.D.	16/933 C.S.M. J. C. Crozier.
Capt. R. H. Worthington, M.C.	

Italian Silver Medal.

Captain W. P. Simm (with 10th N.F.).
 Second-Lieutenant H. C. McDonald (with 10th N.F.).

Croix de Guerre (French).

Lieut.-Colonel A. J. Scully, M.C. (with 2nd Manchesters).
 Second-Lieutenant L. R. Chevrin (with 4th N.F.).

Croix de Guerre (Belgian).

Lieutenant F. J. Dennett (with 19th N.F.).

APPENDICES

APPENDIX I

THE FIRST GUARD, 1914

ONE morning, very early in the career of the battalion, it was deemed necessary to be more military. In consequence the Adjutant and the Commander of "A" Company held a conference. The records do not state who took the Chair, and who was Deputy-Chairman. The business was serious; the result of the earnest confabulation was the decision to mount a guard. Eight large-sized private soldiers, in various civilian attire—it is impossible to classify them, as Mallaby-Deeley wasn't invented then—were selected from No. 1 platoon, told they were to be a guard, and, after a few minutes of feverish instruction, they were mounted outside the Orderly Room Hut at the entrance to the Parade Ground.

This accomplished, the Adjutant and O.C. Company descended on No. 2 platoon, and broke the news to them that they had to furnish the relieving guard at 5 p.m., and remain on duty all night. All night! The prospect pleased, and everyone was keen to be selected. Tall men puffed out their chests; short men stood on tiptoe; medium men tried to look stockier. Eventually the stalwart eight were selected; one was made Sergeant-of-the-Guard, another corporal, and the remaining six were to do sentry-go. Most of the guard belonged to that famous squad, the "Applicants for Commissions," and accordingly were lance-corporals (unpaid). This did not seem to matter, as their badge of office, a band of white tape, was easily removed.

One budding applicant, who had been attending a course in physical drill, was very much disturbed on returning, fully qualified, to the platoon. His comrades were drilling for the guard, and he, the fully fledged, had not been chosen. He asked to be included, and was refused. As a consolation, however, he was told that, if he really were keen, he could act as runner, and provide light refreshment throughout the night. To this he gratefully agreed.

The guard was duly mounted at 5 p.m.—and "Potiphar" arrived. He shall be nameless, despite the honours thrust upon him: to begin with, he was the first Orderly Officer on the roster; added to this, he had instructions to mount the first real guard of the battalion. The honours were too much for him. Misunderstanding the order about the mounting of the guard, he arrived, and to the disgust of the newly, and temporarily, promoted sergeant established himself on a camp bed in the Orderly Room. From

this throne he announced that he was "Captain of the Guard." Hence the name Potiphar. Honours flowed rapidly to him!

Moreover, once he had established himself in the Orderly Room he ceased to worry those outside. The guard continued to perform its duties undisturbed. Much had to be improvised; the lack of knowledge was nothing to the lack of necessary accoutrements. There was only one rifle, a small-sized carbine. This made the changing of sentries a complicated business. The ritual had to be ignored while the relieved and the relief did some most excellent sleight-of-hand work transferring the one and only pet carbine!

So far, so wonderful. But there was one serious drawback. The rationing department did not appear to be functioning at all. Sentries were hungry; they told the "corporal"; he told the sergeant, but the sergeant apparently did not inform Potiphar. *They* held a conference. It was unanimously decided that it would not be a terrible crime if they proceeded two at a time to where food might be found. They did so, and, in pairs, duly proceeded to the Turk's Head Hotel and fortified themselves against the terrors of the night. By about 9 p.m. this manoeuvre was safely carried through, and all felt very comfortable. Later, the self-appointed runner appeared with a large basket. This receptacle contained tangible evidence of the runner's ideas on refreshment, to wit, many bottles of Bass. Again, so far, so delightful.

Near midnight, a taxi drew up, and from it alighted O.C. "A" Company. The sentry, standing gracefully at ease with the carbine in his right hand and a bottle of Bass in the left, challenged instantly.

"Halt, who goes there?"

"Captain of the Week."

"Advance and be recognised!" Then, raising the bottle to his lips he said, "Cheerio, Captain of the Week." For this he was duly "ticked-off" and ordered to turn out the guard.

"Guard—turn out!"

Nothing happened.

"Guard—turn out!"

The result was the same.

This was terrible, and the slumbering Potiphar was rooted out of his flea-bag to explain matters. With the aid of a candle, he explored the guard tent. No guard was there. Only, there stood a platoon of empty bottles, stiffly at attention, correctly dressed by the right.

Further search revealed the missing men hiding behind a fence, thoroughly enjoying the fun. The Captain of the Week was pacified—this is not an advertisement for Bass, but we'll let it go at that—and departed peacefully in the taxi.

Next morning at 8 o'clock no relief arrived. There is no record to show why any relief should be expected at that time. Forthwith, the guard "piled" the carbine and went home to breakfast, leaving Potiphar alone in his glory.

APPENDIX II

THE COMPOSITE BATTALION

THE " marksmen " of the Composite Battalion lived for a while in a blaze of glory. Active service at last, right plump in the midst of their native country, was their honour. Well might they look down on the veritable beginners labouring away at physical jerks, and squad drill. Were not the " Composites " the *Corps d'Elite* of the newly-raised armies? To action—and let it be soon.

The members were not to go home that night (mid-November, 1914). Expectancy throbbed through the martial array on the North Road. Accommodation was to be found for them in the Grammar School, which, for the first and last time in the war, became a Military Billet. The School had many advantages; it was warm, airy, and sanitary. One disadvantage it had—a parquet floor. Active service is all right, but no means have yet been discovered to soften parquet floors sufficiently to allow even moderate comfort. Many who tried to sleep that night found that hip-bones and shoulder-bones protruded in a disconcerting way. The only real method of trying to gain comparative ease was to turn over at intervals; the bruises were thus equally distributed right and left.

A good meal was provided in the evening. Then followed the allocation of the " sleeping accommodation." (How we still admire the euphemisms of the Army!) After that the blow fell—no late passes were to be issued. Many a promising rendezvous was blotted out by that order; many a damsel waited in vain. Still, it was active service, and these dire conditions had to be accepted. The hardships of war were cheerfully borne; to-morrow would see the glories of war, and the German raiders repulsed. And so to bed, as old Pepys remarked.

There was time to imagine the struggles of the morrow. Would there be 5,000 or 50,000 Germans? Mental plans were made; but the most gorgeous act of bravery in this untrammelled flight of fancy was always spoilt. The parquet floor *was* hard, and aching bones gave a touch of reality to the honourable wounds received in the imaginative warfare. At some dim ghostly hour of the morning, the Adjutant, Captain O'Brien, caused a great flutter in the Sergeants' Room. We were to be alert at dawn; the crisis was at hand.

Dawn greyed the sky; it was as cheerless and as chilly a dawn as November could produce. We stood to arms, and thought war was a grim and unfriendly business. Nothing happened, save the

involuntary chattering of chilled jaws. Breakfast arrived, and a few surreptitiously obtained morning papers rather altered the outlook. Life was a more normal affair after all. Gone were the clouds of glory. We had endured the hardships of active service (and parquet floors) without having the compensations of war.

Not yet was the end. The next day we moved to quarters which made us yearn for the spaciousness of those we had just left. No doubt Major Talbot was very glad to see the "Composites" leave. As we remarked before—this was the first and last time that the Grammar School was used as a Military Billet!

The glory was departing. Clarence Street Schools gave the finishing touch to our roseate hopes. They may be all right as schools (but we doubt it); they were not designed as billets. It would seem as though a far-seeing, but inherently malicious, billeting authority had deliberately chosen the place and its appalling environment in order to dissipate our exalted but justifiable notions. If that were the idea, the results must have been very pleasing to the diabolical mind that conceived it!

No one would have minded the billet so very much if they could have got clear of the place. The trouble was that no one was allowed out in the evenings. Only those who have been cooped up night after night in a badly lighted, badly ventilated and dirty schoolroom in their own town, with all their own associations close at hand can fully realise what an irksome business it was.

During three weary weeks we had time to ponder over the idea of being marksmen. The man who had slain the celluloid ball at the "Hoppings" did not long marvel at his skill: he had other views about his qualifications. Three weeks of Clarence Street Schools would shift the delusions even out of a Pussyfoot. Glad enough were we all to receive orders to rejoin our units; and cheered at the inglorious end of the Composite Battalion.

APPENDIX III

“ THE GROWLER ”

IN January, 1915, there appeared a modest booklet of eight pages. It was entitled *The Growler*, with a sub-title of “ The Organ of the 16th (Service) Battalion Northumberland Fusiliers.” The price was one penny and its advent created a sensation. It exercised the soldiers’ privilege of grousing, and was unique in putting the growls into print. *The Growler* did not claim to be an official paper, aspiring only to “ consider caustically camp concerns, curious customs, commonplace conversations, cookhouse complaints, crime, criminals, contemptuous collared civilians, comical complications.” Such things, and others, were duly and caustically considered.

Many of the quips were of fleeting interest; the doctor’s habit of prescribing pills for all complaints, the curiosities of promotion, the iniquities of cooks, the vagaries of the military police, all these happened in all battalions. In the letters of “ Horace to Hypatia,” camp matters were treated in a whimsical style. The foolish egotism of the period was cleverly satirised; and the blind groping for knowledge was portrayed with peculiar insight. Horace, on one occasion, being one of the rearguard, managed to pass the main body, the advance guard and the scouts without being seen. “ Later,” wrote he, “ I lost my way. I had an illuminated compass, three flash lamps and half a dozen maps, but the bally things must have gone wrong, because they most certainly did not lead me back to camp.” Nor was Horace alone in his misuse of the new toys, for did not someone put a compass on an iron railing and wonder at its feverish swinging?

The first number was a success, and No. 2 appeared in February, 1915, enlarged to twelve pages. No. 3 followed in March, one feature being a copy of a letter from Robert Blatchford. Evidently the admonition “ to keep on growling ” had spurred the anonymous Editor, for “ *The Growler* shows his teeth.” Many allusions are very pointed: many of the gibes must have struck home. One of more general application survived throughout the war: “ If you wish to receive special consideration, extra leave, etc., become a regimental cook, postman, officer’s servant, butcher, etc. It is strange but true; perhaps you haven’t noticed it? ” In this number Horace again wrote much informative matter to his darling Hypatia. “ I have also heard that a weekly paper has arranged to

give commissions or half-crowns to the senders of the correct scores of fifteen football contests. Jolly original, I call it."

In April, No. 4 was published, with the threat that it was the last issue. *The Growler* knew his own style, for in his farewell snarl he said:

'Tis sad to think this issue is the last,
Hard to know the final die is cast.
Easy it was to make oneself a pest,
Grievous to give our caustic pen a rest.
Rot has been written in the poorest vein,
Odes may have caused our readers bitter pain,
Wicked assertions reckoned by the score,
Lurking allusions barely safe from law,
Eccentric we have lived, and now, farewell!
Read our last words—the *Growler's* final yell.

No reason was given for the threat; and the Editor produced an excellent number, witty and as biting as any issue. Witness the discussion of the new khaki uniforms.

CAPTAIN: "Is the new khaki thin or thick?"

SEC.-LIEUTENANT: "I don't know."

CAPTAIN: "Because if it's thin we go to a hot country, and if it's thick we are bound for a chillier place."

PRIVATE (feeling the texture of the cloth): "O—L."

Or consider the "Ode to a Budding Moustache."

Mysterious growth, a gift from the unknown,
Who knows the joy that thrills thy eager root,
As to admiring glances on thee thrown,
There springs at length, unshorn, a tender shoot?
What recks it though thou art but silken threads,
In some "extended order" not in "mass"?
Thy presence truly some small glory sheds,
And razors now must "Please keep off the grass."

Was it not universally true? *The Growler* knew.

Horace scintillated in No. 4 with his description of Battalion Drill. He deemed the most important commands were "Slope arms" and "As you were," as these were so frequently heard. One grouse he had: "Seven months a soldier, and I'm still a private; I wish I could get transferred to No. 1 platoon because then I would be certain of promotion."

So ended *The Growler*, only to revive and carry on in June. The move to Cramlington had been made, and perhaps the sea-air in Canvas-town had changed the Editor's attitude. It was a happy revival. With his pen ever ready in a good cause he published to the world that "we are grieved to know that some of our officers are fearfully overcrowded, and in many cases are jammed two and even three in a tent. And they call this a civilised country!"

The afflictions of Cramlington are duly recorded by Horace. He was not the only one who, from absent-mindedness, found himself beyond the three-miles limit and well on the way to Newcastle. To him, however, is the honour of acknowledging that the duty of the picket was to see that the fence was not broken when men returned to camp. Oh, happy days!

LIBELLOUS PORTRAITURES—No 3



OUR COLONEL

All Officers commanding must be a trifle hard,
But caustic words sometimes conceal a manner really kind,
And if you get quite ratty at something that is barred,
We know you've got to do it and we really do not mind.

(Specimen page from The Growler)

Catterick was severely criticised in No. 6 (July, 1915); a mild form of sleeping sickness having attacked everyone. Muddy Codford was similarly treated in No. 7 (August), though there *were* cheerful innuendoes about the Musketry Camp at Monkseaton. The notes on the Machine-Gun Section are illuminating.

Total number of rambles	...	...	...	95
Grouse killed	...	...	...	2
Conversations on Art, Religion and the Drama	...	...	...	523
Lectures on Machine-Guns	...	...	...	2
Advantages: No fatigue work. M.G.S. after our names.				
Disadvantages: Carrying machine-guns; and work generally.				

In October, No. 8 appeared with a special cover designed by C. O. Wade. Around the margin were the lineaments of many of the "characters" in the battalion. Contributors had increased, and many sidelights glowed on sectional activities. Passage of time has dulled the memory of the allusions, but the present writer has been fortunate in being permitted to see the Editor's own copy, complete with annotations. It is a matter for conjecture if the individuals concerned would rest easily at nights with this evidence still in existence! To follow *The Growler's* own method: Who was the officer, who, while the men were digging for chalk on the Plain, was caught in a shower and had to disclose the fact that his podgy valise contained—nothing? And who was the captain who, lost with a squad of grinning signallers, mistook a shirt on a line for a hostile flag-wagger? No. 8 *was* a special number!

This was the last number published in England. Delays occurred; the Censor had to be appeased, and No. 9 (the M.O. had nothing to do with it) appeared in March, 1916, at the increased price of tuppence. It was a venture; and the number was filled with details of the new life. Rats, of course, received due acknowledgement: so did ration cigarettes. It were well to recall the names, or some of them, that appeared on the boxes: others appeared as the war went on, but *The Growler*, in a concise paragraph united his "Ruby Queens," "Life Rays," "All Arms," etc. The Editor was always on the mark, a leader of caustic comment. Horace, dear boy, had a gibe at certain slackers. "I am so glad — RUSHED to the colours after eighteen months of war. Lord Derby WILL be proud."

The next, and final number, was dated July. It contained many new features, more sketches by C. Wade, and the satiric notes had given place to longer, but equally penetrating, articles. *The Growler* was making great advances; the magazine was a very worthy effort, and the battalion had every reason to be proud of its unique publication. By this time, of course, the Editor was known. Corporal Ben Carr had done much for the social life of the battalion, *The Growler* being one of his many activities. He had written the Revue that was produced at Pierregot and had promised

to write a copy for Major Little to file with the Battalion Records. Fate willed it otherwise. Passing up the trench in readiness for the opening of the Battle of the Somme, Corporal Ben Carr handed a slip of paper to the Major. The words had a pathetic note of prophecy: and are given in full.

Here's to To-morrow.

Sir,

I must crave pardon, my promise has been broken,
And work, alas, undone—a cause for bitter sorrow;
But I do fain assure you, on my word's own token,
You shall, if I can write, receive "Fair Game" to-morrow.

A few scrawled sheets I cast away as careless and ill done
And vowed of future golden time to borrow,
Wherein to pen a screed with ending good, and well begun,
A task that surely will be sweet to do to-morrow.

"Oh! to-morrow never comes," I've heard some people say,
With wisdom surely irritating beyond measure.
But I swear that when the present future is to-day,
If fate so wills, I gladly will disgorge the promised treasure.

It was not to be. Corporal Ben Carr, whose geniality, kindness and wit had done so much for his battalion, was killed in action on 1st July, 1916. So passed, with hundreds of his comrades, a unique character.

I am indebted to Mrs Farrow, Corporal Carr's sister, for the loan of the complete, annotated volume of *The Growler*, and for the copy of the magazine of the Church of the Divine Unity, Newcastle-upon-Tyne. From this magazine the following quotation is taken:

"Ben had a genial personality which won those he met and especially fitted him for the profession he had chosen, that of an actor. Just prior to his enlistment he was showing great promise as an interpreter of the gentler type of manhood. Being deeply moved by the German tactics he not only enlisted at the outset of the war, but undertook to address recruiting meetings. He had ability as a speaker, and the work he did was appreciated by those in authority. He was early offered promotion, which he refused, and only accepted his stripes under pressure. It was his deep sense of duty that made him into an efficient soldier, for he was by nature an artist and an idealist. He had a fund of humour and a delicate literary touch. One of the most successful Battalion periodicals was *The Growler*, of which he was the Editor, and to which he was the chief contributor. Congratulations on the ability of its issues were received from some of the foremost journalists. It will be pathetic to turn to its pages and to reflect that the man who did so much to entertain his comrades and to keep them in good spirit is no longer with them. A loss of this character brings home to us the unspeakable sadness of war."

APPENDIX IV

BATTALION SPORTS

THE fact that the 16th Battalion was raised within a week is sufficient proof that it was composed of some of the best and finest sportsmen on Tyneside.

In a limited space an attempt will be made to give a short account of the activities of the battalion in the realms of sport. The magnitude of its achievements in the hard school of war was rivalled only by the brilliant record of successes in the playing field. Closely following the formation of the battalion, both Rugby and Association teams were formed. The Soccer XI contained internationals and regular players for Newcastle United, while the Rugger XV was almost of County calibre.

In September, 1914, the battalion XV first appeared at the Royal Grammar School ground. It was raised at short notice and captained by Lieutenant E. Thomson. Lieutenant-Colonel Ritson, V.D., a fine sportsman, had challenged his old battalion (the 6th) then stationed at Gosforth Park. The outcome of the contest was a decisive victory for the 16th. It would be interesting at this point to recall the names of those (many alas, since fallen in the field of honour) who played on this memorable occasion.

Full Back.—Sgt. A. L. Woodman (North Durham and Durham County).

Three-quarters.—Pte. Hodgson (Blaydon and Durham County), Pte. A. Thompson (Northumberland and Gosforth Nomads), Lieut. E. Thompson (Captain) (Northumberland and Gosforth Nomads), and L/Cpl. H. G. Smith (Rockeliff).

Half Backs.—Pte. R. Lunn (Northumberland and Nomads), and Pte. Lacey (Gosforth Nomads).

Forwards.—Pte. R. Foster (North Durham), Pte. J. Bruce (Durham County and North Durham), Pte. R. Noble (Durham County and North Durham), Sgt. A. Simpson (North Durham), Sgt. W. Dunglinson (Northumberland and Nomads), Pte. F. Crozier (Gosforth Nomads), Pte. Hogg (Percy Park), L/Cpl. W. Armstrong (Gosforth Nomads), L/Cpl. V. Potts (Grammar School) (Res.).

The Referee was Sergeant H. G. Spence, the old County player.

Subsequently several other matches were played with regiments



Photo by]

RUGBY TEAM.

[“ Illustrated Chronicle.”



Photo by]

THE CRICKET TEAM, 1915.

[Major L. B. Proctor. M.C.

stationed in the district from which the battalion team emerged victorious on each occasion.

Just before Christmas, 1914, when the Battalion moved to Alnwick, the County Rugby Union Committee was gracious enough to permit us to use their ground at Gosforth. This was a distinct advantage for it was now possible to arrange games at Gosforth with troops stationed in Northumberland and Durham, who would have found it impossible to come over to Alnwick. The bracing air of Alnwick and the hard field manœuvres improved the physique of all ranks beyond all reckoning, and the result was shown in the continued success of the XV.

Despite the fact that many notable playing members had left the battalion to take up commissions in the "New Army," substitutes of such remarkable calibre were soon found, that the battalion team never seemed to diminish in strength. The "Tyneside Irish" in this respect were perhaps our greatest rivals, and although Lieutenant R. J. Lunn, Lieutenant T. Farina, Lieutenant Arthur Thompson and others had been transferred as officers to this battalion nevertheless in several matches played between the battalions the 16th always managed to get home victorious.

In the "back-end" of 1915, the battalion proceeded to France, and in the strenuous days of trench warfare Rugby was forced to take a back seat. But long spells in the trenches (sometimes three and four weeks on end) did not destroy the love of the Rugby game. The moment the battalion was settled down in billets for "rest" the old rugger ball (an integral part of the regimental kit which was entrusted as a precious possession to the care of the Regimental Q.M.S.), was produced, and scratch games within the battalion were arranged and thoroughly enjoyed. Perhaps in those strenuous days no one enjoyed the game of football more than the 16th Northumberland Fusiliers. It is interesting to note that after the Battle of the Somme when the battalion was almost wiped out in an attempt to carry Thiepval, a great effort was made to reconstitute the Rugby XV. Only one of the players of the old Alnwick days was forthcoming—the remainder had either fallen or had gone home wounded.

A challenge from the R.E. whilst at Beuvry (near Bethune) was accepted, and during the few days preceding the game much trouble was taken in schooling our new XV. Our opponents were a strong side, but after a very strenuous game, the battalion emerged victorious by 13 points to 11 points. This was the last fixture played by the 16th.

Although we have showered encomiums on the Rugger team, the Association XI played a no less conspicuous part in regimental life.

Noteworthy members of the team were Captain P. G. Graham, Captain Laird, Lieutenant Lunn, Private Dan Dunghinson (Amateur International), and Privates Hardy and Goodwill (Newcastle United). They played numerous matches with regimental teams in the district with the same success as attended the Rugby XV.

In the athletic world the 16th shone to some purpose. St George's Day was always celebrated in the true traditional manner of the Fifth Fusiliers. The afternoon was devoted to sport; races, boxing and jumping were arranged, and there was never any lack of aspirants to regimental honours in Rugger, Soccer, or Athletics.

The astonishing courage and steadfastness which the battalion always showed in the face of the enemy reflected the spirit of comradeship which found expression on playing field and track.

APPENDIX V

EXTRACTS FROM SIR DOUGLAS HAIG'S SECOND DESPATCH (29/12/16)

THE BATTLE OF THE SOMME

1. . . . Subject to the necessity of commencing operations before the summer was too far advanced, and with due regard to the general situation, I desired to postpone my attack as long as possible. The British Armies were growing in numbers and the supply of munitions was steadily increasing. Moreover, a very large proportion of the officers and men under my command were still far from being fully trained, and the longer the attack could be deferred the more efficient they would become. On the other hand the Germans were continuing to press their attacks at Verdun, and both there and on the Italian front, where the Austrian offensive was gaining ground, it was evident that the strain might become too great to be borne unless timely action were taken to relieve it. Accordingly, while maintaining constant touch with General Joffre in regard to all these considerations, my preparations were pushed on, and I agreed, with the consent of His Majesty's Government, that my attack should be launched whenever the general situation required it with as great a force as I might then be able to make available.

2. By the end of May the pressure of the enemy on the Italian front had assumed such serious proportions that the Russian campaign was opened early in June, and the brilliant successes gained by our Allies against the Austrians at once caused a movement of German troops from the Western to the Eastern front. This, however, did not lessen the pressure on Verdun. The heroic defence of our French Allies had already gained many weeks of inestimable value, and had caused the enemy very heavy losses; but the strain continued to increase. In view, therefore, of the situation in the various theatres of war, it was eventually agreed between General Joffre and myself that the combined French and British offensive should not be postponed beyond the end of June.

THE BRITISH OBJECTIVE

The object of the offensive was threefold:

- (1) To relieve the pressure on Verdun.
- (2) To assist our Allies in the other theatres of war by stopping

any further transfer of German troops from the Western front.

(3) To wear down the strength of the forces opposed to us.

3. While my final preparations were in progress the enemy made two unsuccessful attempts to interfere with my arrangements. The first, directed on the 21st May against our positions on the Vimy Ridge, south and south-east of Souchez, resulted in a small enemy gain of no strategic or tactical importance; and rather than weaken my offensive by involving additional troops in the task of recovering the lost ground, I decided to consolidate a position in rear of our original line.

The second enemy attack was delivered on the 2nd June, on a front of over one and a half miles from Mount Sorrel to Hooze, and succeeded in penetrating to a maximum depth of 700 yards. As the southern part of the lost position commanded our trenches I judged it necessary to recover it, and by an attack launched on the 13th June, carefully prepared and well executed, this was successfully accomplished by the troops on the spot. Neither of these enemy attacks succeeded in delaying the preparations for the major operations which I had in view.

4. The preparations were necessarily very elaborate and took considerable time.

Vast stocks of ammunition and stores of all kinds had to be accumulated beforehand within a convenient distance of our front. To deal with these many miles of new railways—both standard and narrow gauge—and trench tramways were laid. All available roads were improved, many others were made, and long causeways were built over marshy valleys. Many additional dug-outs had to be provided as shelter for the troops, for use as dressing-stations for the wounded, and as magazines for storing ammunition, food, water, and engineering material. Scores of miles of deep communication trenches had to be dug, as well as trenches for telephone wires, assembly and assault trenches, and numerous gun emplacements and observation posts.

Important mining operations were undertaken, and charges were laid at various points beneath the enemy's lines.

Except in the river valleys, the existing supplies of water were hopelessly insufficient to meet the requirements of the numbers of men and horses to be concentrated in this area as the preparations for our offensive proceeded. To meet this difficulty many wells and borings were sunk, and over one hundred pumping plants were installed. More than one hundred and twenty miles of water mains were laid, and everything was got ready to ensure an adequate water supply as our troops advanced.

Much of this preparatory work had to be done under very trying conditions, and was liable to constant interruption from the enemy's fire. The weather, on the whole, was bad, and the local accommodation totally insufficient for housing the troops employed, who

consequently had to content themselves with such rough shelter as could be provided in the circumstances. All this labour, too, had to be carried out in addition to fighting and to the everyday work of maintaining existing defences. It threw a heavy strain on the troops, which was borne by them with a cheerfulness beyond all praise.

THE GERMAN POSITION

5. . . . During nearly two years' preparation he had spared no pains to render these defences impregnable. The first and second systems each consisted of several lines of deep trenches, well provided with bomb-proof shelters and with numerous communication trenches connecting them. The front of the trenches in each system was protected by wire entanglements, many of them in two belts forty yards broad, built of iron stakes interlaced with barbed wire, often almost as thick as a man's finger.

The numerous woods and villages in and between these systems of defence had been turned into veritable fortresses. The deep cellars usually to be found in the villages, and the numerous pits and quarries common to a chalk country, were used to provide cover for machine guns and trench mortars. The existing cellars were supplemented by elaborate dug-outs, sometimes in two storeys, and these were connected up by passages as much as thirty feet below the surface of the ground. The salients in the enemy's line, from which he could bring enfilade fire across his front, were made into self-contained forts, and often protected by mine fields; while strong redoubts and concrete machine-gun emplacements had been constructed in positions from which he could sweep his own trenches should these be taken. The ground lent itself to good artillery observation on the enemy's part, and he had skilfully arranged for cross fire by his guns.

These various systems of defence, with the fortified localities and other supporting points between them, were cunningly sited to afford each other mutual assistance and to admit of the utmost possible development of enfilade and flanking fire by machine guns and artillery. They formed, in short, not merely a series of successive lines, but one composite system of enormous depth and strength.

Behind his second system of trenches, in addition to woods, villages and other strong points prepared for defence, the enemy had several other lines already completed; and we had learned from aeroplane reconnaissance that he was hard at work improving and strengthening these, and digging fresh ones between them and still farther back.

In the area above described, between the Somme and the Ancre, our front line trenches ran parallel and close to those of the enemy, but below them. . . .

7. Defences of the nature described could only be attacked with

any prospect of success after careful artillery preparation. It was accordingly decided that our bombardment should begin on the 24th June, and a large force of artillery was brought into action for the purpose.

Artillery bombardments were also carried out daily at different points on the rest of our front, and during the period from the 24th June to 1st July gas was discharged with good effect at more than forty places along our line upon a frontage which in total amounted to over fifteen miles. Some seventy raids, too, were undertaken by our infantry between Gommecourt and our extreme left, north of Ypres, during the week preceding the attack, and these kept me well informed as to the enemy's dispositions, besides serving other useful purposes.

On the 25th June the Royal Flying Corps carried out a general attack on the enemy's observation balloons, destroying nine of them, and depriving the enemy for the time being of this form of observation.

8. . . . On the spur running south from Thiepval the work known as the Leipzig Salient was stormed, and severe fighting took place for the possession of the village and its defences. Here and north of the valley of the Ancre as far as Serre, on the left flank of our attack, our initial successes were not sustained. Striking progress was made at many points, and parties of troops penetrated the enemy's position to the outer defences of Grandcourt, and also to Pendant Copse and Serre; but the enemy's continued resistance at Thiepval and Beaumont Hamel made it impossible to forward reinforcements and ammunition, and, in spite of their gallant efforts, our troops were forced to withdraw during the night to their own lines. . . .

14. . . . Since the attack of the 7th July the enemy in and about Ovillers had been pressed relentlessly, and gradually driven back by incessant bombing attacks and local assaults, in accordance with the general instructions I had given to General Sir Hubert Gough. On the 16th July a large body of the garrison of Ovillers surrendered, and that night and during the following day, by a direct advance from the west across No Man's Land, our troops carried the remainder of the village and pushed out along the spur to the north and eastwards towards Pozières.

15. The results of the operations of the 14th July and subsequent days were of considerable importance. The enemy's second main system of defence had been captured on a front of over three miles. We had again forced him back more than a mile, and had gained possession of the southern crest of the main ridge on a front of 6,000 yards. Four more of his fortified villages and three woods had been wrested from him by determined fighting, and our advanced troops had penetrated as far as his third line of defence. . . . During these operations and their development on the 15th a

number of enemy guns were taken, making our total captures since the 1st July 8 heavy howitzers, 4 heavy guns, 42 field and light guns and field howitzers, 30 trench mortars and 52 machine guns. Very considerable losses had been inflicted on the enemy, and the prisoners captured amounted to over 2,000, bringing the total since the 1st July to over 10,000.

THE SITUATION IN EARLY SEPTEMBER

25. . . . Our advance on Thiepval, and on the defences above it, had been carried out up to this date, in accordance with my instructions given on the 3rd July, by a slow and methodical progression, in which great skill and much patience and endurance had been displayed with entirely satisfactory results. General Gough's Army had, in fact, acted most successfully in the required manner as a pivot to the remainder of the attack. The Thiepval defences were known to be exceptionally strong, and as immediate possession of them was not necessary to the development of my plans after the 1st July, there had been no need to incur the heavy casualties to be expected in an attempt to rush them. The time was now approaching, although it had not yet arrived, when their capture would become necessary; but from the position we had now reached, and those we expected shortly to obtain, I had no doubt that they could be rushed when required without undue loss. An important part of the remaining positions required for my assault on them was now won by a highly successful enterprise carried out on the evening of the 14th September, by which the Wonderwork was stormed. . . .

30. The success of the Fourth Army [Morval, Les Bœufs, and Gueudecourt] had now brought our advance to the stage at which I judged it advisable that Thiepval should be taken, in order to bring our left flank into line and establish it on the main ridge above that village, the possession of which would be of considerable tactical value in future operations.

Accordingly at 12.25 p.m. on the 26th September, before the enemy had been given time to recover from the blow struck by the Fourth Army, a general attack was launched against Thiepval and the Thiepval Ridge. The objective consisted of the whole of the high ground still remaining in enemy hands extending over a front of some 3,000 yards north and east of Thiepval, and including, in addition to that fortress, the Zollern Redoubt, the Stuff Redoubt, and the Schwaben Redoubt, with the connecting lines of trenches.

The attack was a brilliant success. On the right our troops reached the system of enemy trenches which formed their objectives without great difficulty. In Thiepval and the strong works to the north of it the enemy's resistance was more desperate. Three waves of our attacking troops carried the outer defences of Mouquet Farm, and, pushing on, entered Zollern Redoubt, which they stormed and

consolidated. In the strong point formed by the buildings of the farm itself, the enemy garrison, securely posted in deep cellars, held out until 6 p.m., when their last defences were forced by a working party of a Pioneer Battalion acting on its own initiative.

On the left of the attack fierce fighting, in which Tanks again gave valuable assistance to our troops, continued in Thiepval during that day and the following night, but by 8.30 a.m. on the 27th September the whole of the village of Thiepval was in our hands.

Some 2,300 prisoners were taken in the course of the fighting on the Thiepval Ridge on these and the subsequent days, bringing the total number of prisoners taken in the battle area in the operations of the 14th—30th September to nearly 10,000. In the same period we had captured 27 guns, over 200 machine guns, and some 40 trench mortars.

31. On the same date the south and west sides of Stuff Redoubt were carried by our troops, together with the length of trench connecting that strong point with Schwaben Redoubt to the west and also the greater part of the enemy's defensive line eastwards along the northern slopes of the ridge. Schwaben Redoubt was assaulted during the afternoon, and in spite of counter attacks, delivered by strong enemy reinforcements, we captured the whole of the southern face of the redoubt and pushed out patrols to the northern face and towards St Pierre Divion.

35. . . . The hamlet of St Pierre Divion and the villages of Beaucourt-sur-Ancre and Beaumont Hamel, like the rest of the villages forming part of the enemy's original front in this district, were evidently intended by him to form a permanent line of fortifications, while he developed his offensive elsewhere. Realising that his position in them had become a dangerous one, the enemy had multiplied the number of his guns covering this part of the line, and at the end of October introduced an additional Division on his front between Grandcourt and Hebuterne.

36. At 5 a.m. on the morning of the 11th November the special bombardment preliminary to the attack was commenced. It continued with bursts of great intensity until 5.45 a.m. on the morning of 13th November, when it developed into a very effective barrage covering the assaulting infantry.

At that hour our troops advanced on the enemy's position through dense fog, and rapidly entered his first line trenches on almost the whole of the front attacked, from east of Schwaben Redoubt to the north of Serre. South of the Ancre, where our assault was directed northwards against the enemy's trenches on the northern slopes of the Thiepval Ridge, it met with a success altogether remarkable for rapidity of execution and lightness of cost. By 7.20 a.m. our objectives east of St Pierre Divion had

been captured, and the Germans in and about that hamlet were hemmed in between our troops and the river. Many of the enemy were driven into their dug-outs and surrendered, and at 9 a.m. the number of prisoners was actually greater than the attacking force. St Pierre Divion soon fell, and in this area nearly 1,400 prisoners were taken by a single division at the expense of less than 600 casualties. The rest of our forces operating south of the Ancre attained their objectives with equal completeness and success.

North of the river the struggle was more severe, but very satisfactory results were achieved. Though parties of the enemy held out for some hours during the day in strong points at various places along his first line and in Beaumont Hamel, the main attack pushed on. The troops attacking close to the right bank of the Ancre reached their second objectives to the west and north-west of Beaucourt during the morning, and held on there for the remainder of the day and night, though practically isolated from the rest of our attacking troops. Their tenacity was of the utmost value, and contributed very largely to the success of the operations.

At nightfall our troops were established on the western outskirts of Beaucourt, in touch with our forces south of the river, and held a line along the station road from the Ancre towards Beaumont Hamel, where we occupied the village. Farther north the enemy's first line system for a distance of about half a mile beyond Beaumont Hamel was also in our hands. Still farther north—opposite Serre—the ground was so heavy that it became necessary to abandon the attack at an early stage; although, despite all difficulties, our troops had in places reached the enemy's trenches in the course of their assault.

Next morning, at an early hour, the attack was renewed between Beaucourt and the top of the spur just north of Beaumont Hamel. The whole of Beaucourt was carried, and our line extended to the north-west along the Beaucourt Road across the southern end of the Beaumont Hamel spur. The number of our prisoners steadily rose, and during this and the succeeding days our front was carried forward eastwards and northwards up the slopes of the Beaumont Hamel spur.

The results of this attack were very satisfactory, especially as before its completion bad weather had set in again. We had secured the command of the Ancre valley on both banks of the river at the point where it entered the enemy's lines, and, without great cost to ourselves, losses had been inflicted on the enemy which he himself admitted to be considerable. Our final total of prisoners taken in these operations, and their development during the subsequent days, exceeded 7,200, including 149 officers.

THE OBJECTS OBTAINED

38. The three main objects with which we had commenced our offensive in July had already been achieved at the date when this

account closes; in spite of the fact that the heavy autumn rains had prevented full advantage being taken of the favourable situation created by our advance, at a time when he had good grounds for hoping to achieve yet more important successes.

Verdun had been relieved; the main German forces had been held on the Western Front; and the enemy's strength had been very considerably worn down.

Any one of these three results is in itself sufficient to justify the Somme battle. The attainment of all three of them affords ample compensation for the splendid efforts of our troops and for the sacrifices made by ourselves and our Allies. They have brought us a long step forward towards the final victory of the Allied cause.

THE FUTURE PROSPECTS

In conclusion, I desire to add a few words as to future prospects.

The enemy's power has not yet been broken, nor is it yet possible to form an estimate of the time the war may last before the objects for which the Allies are fighting have been attained. But the Somme battle has placed beyond doubt the ability of the Allies to gain those objects. The German Army is the mainstay of the Central powers, and a full half of that Army, despite all the advantages of the defensive, supported by the strongest fortifications, suffered defeat on the Somme this year. Neither victors nor the vanquished will forget this; and, though bad weather has given the enemy a respite, there will undoubtedly be many thousands in his ranks who will begin the new campaign with little confidence in their ability to resist our assaults or to overcome our defence.

Our new Armies entered the battle with the determination to win and with confidence in their power to do so. They have proved to themselves, to the enemy, and to the world that this confidence was justified, and in the fierce struggle they have been through they have learned many valuable lessons which will help them in the future.

* * * * *

LUDENDORFF ON THE BATTLE OF THE SOMME

"The strain during this year (1916) had proved too great. The endurance of the (German) troops had been weakened by long spells of defence under the powerful enemy artillery fire and their own losses. We were completely exhausted on the Western Front. . . . We now urgently needed a rest. The army had been fought to a standstill and was utterly worn out."

APPENDIX VI

EXTRACTS FROM SIR DOUGLAS HAIG'S FOURTH DESPATCH

PREPARATIONS FOR THE MESSINES ATTACK

28. The preparations for the attack on the Messines—Wytshaete Ridge were necessarily as elaborate as those undertaken before either the Somme or the Arras battles, and demanded an equal amount of time, forethought, and labour. They were carried out, moreover, under circumstances of exceptional difficulty; for the enemy's positions completely overlooked our lines, and much of the area between them.

Neither labour nor material was available in sufficient quantity for the Messines offensive until the prior demands of the Arras operations had been satisfied. Nevertheless, our preparations in the northern area had been proceeded with steadily, so far as the means at our disposal would allow, ever since the formation of definite plans in the late autumn of 1916.

A large railway programme had been commenced, and as soon as it was possible to divert larger supplies northwards, work was pushed on with remarkable speed. Great progress was made with road construction, and certain roads were selected for extension as soon as our objectives should be gained. Forward dumps of material were made for this purpose, and in the days following the 7th June roads were carried forward with great rapidity to Messines, Wytshaete, and Oostaverne, across country so completely destroyed by shell-fire that it was difficult to trace where the original road had run.

A special problem arose in connection with the water supply. Pipe lines were taken well forward from existing lakes, from catch pits constructed on the Kemmel Hills, and from sterilising barges on the Lys. Provision was made for the rapid extension of these lines. By the 15th June they had reached Messines, Wytshaete, and the Dam Strasse, and were supplying water at the rate of between 450,000 and 600,000 gallons daily.

In addition, arrangements were made for the transport of water, rations and stores by pack animals and carrying parties. So efficiently did these arrangements work that during the attack water reached the troops within twenty to forty minutes of the taking of new positions, while in one case carrying parties arrived with packs, and dumps were formed within four minutes of the capture of the objective.

UNDERGROUND WARFARE

29. A special feature of the attack on the Messines—Wytshaete Ridge, and one unique in warfare, was furnished by the explosion of nineteen deep mines at the moment of assault.

The inception of a deep mining offensive on the Second Army front dated from July, 1915; but the proposal to conduct offensive mining on a grand scale was not definitely adopted until January, 1916. From that date onwards, as the necessary labour became available, deep mining for offensive purposes gradually developed, in spite of great difficulties from water-bearing strata and active countermining by the enemy.

In all, twenty-four mines were constructed, four of which were outside the front ultimately selected for our offensive, while one other was lost as the result of a mine blown by the enemy. Many of these mines had been completed for twelve months prior to our offensive, and constant and anxious work was needed to ensure their safety. The enemy also had a deep mining system, and was aware of his danger.

At Hill 60 continuous underground fighting took place for over ten months prior to our attack, and only by the greatest skill, persistence, and disregard of danger on the part of our tunnellers were the two mines laid by us at this point saved from destruction. At the time of our offensive the enemy was known to be driving a gallery which ultimately would have cut into the gallery leading to the Hill 60 mines. By careful listening it was judged that if our offensive took place on the date arranged the enemy's gallery would just fail to reach us. So he was allowed to proceed.

At the Bluff, also, underground fighting went on incessantly. Between the 16th January, 1916, and the 7th June, 1917, twenty-seven camouflets were blown in this locality alone, of which seventeen were blown by us and ten by the enemy. After the 1st February, 1917, the enemy showed signs of great uneasiness, and blew several heavy mines and camouflets in the endeavour to interfere with our working. One of these blows destroyed our gallery to the Spanbroekmolen mine. For three months this mine was cut off, and was only recovered by strenuous efforts on the day preceding the Messines attack. The Spanbroekmolen mine formed the largest crater of any of those blown, the area of complete obliteration having a diameter of over 140 yards.

A total of 8,000 yards of gallery were driven in the construction of these mines, and over one million pounds of explosives were used in them. The simultaneous discharge of such an enormous aggregate of explosive is without parallel in land mining, and no actual experience existed of the effects which would be produced. In these circumstances, the fact that no hitch of any kind occurred in the operation, and that the effects of the discharges were precisely such as had been foretold, reflects the very highest credit upon those responsible for the planning and construction of the mines.

THE ASSAULT

33. At 3.10 a.m. on the 7th June the nineteen mines were exploded simultaneously beneath the enemy's defences. At the same moment our guns opened and our infantry assault was launched. Covered by a concentrated bombardment, which overwhelmed the enemy's trenches and to a great extent neutralised his batteries, our troops swept over the German foremost defences all along the line.

The attack proceeded from the commencement in almost exact accordance with the time-table. The enemy's first trench system offered little resistance to our advance, and the attacking brigades—English, Irish, Australian, and New Zealand—pressed on up the slopes of the ridge to the assault of the crest line.

At 5.30 a.m. Ulster Regiments had already reached their second objectives, including l'Enfer Hill and the southern defences of Wytschaete, while on their left a South of Ireland Division fought their way through Wytschaete Wood. At 7 a.m. New Zealand troops had captured Messines. Men from the western counties of England had cleared the Grand Bois. Other English county regiments had reached the Dam Strasse, and all along the battle front our second objectives had been gained. . . . Our troops then began to move down the eastern slopes of the ridge, and the divisions in the centre of our attack, who had farthest to go, gradually drew level with those on either flank. About 2,000 prisoners had already been brought in, and Australian and English troops had reached the first of the enemy's guns. Our own guns had begun to move forward. . . . The rapidity with which the attack had been carried through, and the destruction caused by our artillery, made it impossible at first to form more than a rough estimate of our captures. When the final reckoning had been completed, it was found that they included 7,200 prisoners, 67 guns, 94 trench mortars, and 294 machine guns.

THE LOMBARTZYDE ATTACK

37. The appearance of British troops on the coast seems to have alarmed the enemy and caused him to launch a small counter-offensive.

The positions which we had taken over from the French in this area included a narrow strip of polder and dune, some two miles in length and from 600 and 1,200 yards in depth, lying on the right bank of the canalised Yser between the Plasschendaale Canal, south of Lombartzyde, and the coast. Midway between the Plasschendaale Canal and the sea these positions were divided into two parts by the dyke known as the Geleide Creek, which flows into the Yser south-west of Lombartzyde. If the enemy could succeed in driving

us back across the canal and river on the whole of this front, he would render the defence of the sector much easier for him.

Early on the morning of the 10th July an intense bombardment was opened against these positions. Our defences, which consisted chiefly of breastworks built in the sand, were flattened, and all the bridges across the Yser below the Geleide Creek, as well as the bridges across the creek itself, were destroyed.

At 6.30 p.m. the enemy's infantry attacked, and the isolated garrison of our positions north of the Geleide Creek, consisting of troops from a Northamptonshire battalion and a Rifle battalion, were overwhelmed after an obstinate and most gallant resistance. Of these two battalions some 70 men and 4 officers succeeded during the nights of the 10th-11th and 11th-12th July in swimming across the Yser to our lines.

On the southern half of the point attacked, opposite Lombartzyde, the enemy also broke into our lines; but here, where our positions had greater depth, and communication across the Yser was still possible, his troops were ejected by our counter-attack.

THE THIRD BATTLE OF YPRES

Effect of the Weather

43. The weather had been threatening throughout the day [31st July, 1917], and had rendered the work of our aeroplanes very difficult from the commencement of the battle. During the afternoon, while fighting was still in progress, rain began, and fell steadily all night. Thereafter, for four days, the rain continued without cessation, and for several days afterwards remained stormy and unsettled. The low-lying, clayey soil, torn by shells and sodden with rain, turned to a succession of vast muddy pools. The valleys of the choked and overflowing streams were speedily transformed into long stretches of bog, impassable except by a few well-defined tracks, which became marks for the enemy's artillery. To leave these tracks was to risk death by drowning, and in the course of the subsequent fighting on several occasions both men and pack animals were lost in this way. In these conditions operations of any magnitude became impossible, and the resumption of our offensive was necessarily postponed until a period of fine weather should allow the ground to recover.

As had been the case in the Arras battle, this unavoidable delay in the development of our offensive was of the greatest service to the enemy. Valuable time was lost, the troops opposed to us were able to recover from the disorganisation produced by our first attack, and the enemy was given the opportunity to bring up reinforcements.

46. [Attack on Langemarck, 16th August, 1917]. . . . In the centre of the British attack the enemy's resistance was more

obstinate. The difficulty of making deep-mined dug-outs in soil where water lay within a few feet of the surface of the ground had compelled the enemy to construct in the ruins of farms and in other suitable localities a number of strong points or "pill-boxes" built of reinforced concrete often many feet thick.

These field forts, distributed in depth all along the front of our advance, offered a serious obstacle to progress. They were heavily armed with machine guns, and manned by men determined to hold on at all costs. Many were reduced as our troops advanced, but others held out throughout the day, and delayed the arrival of our supports. In addition, weather conditions made aeroplane observation practically impossible, with the result that no warning was received of the enemy's counter-attacks, and our infantry obtained little artillery help against them.

PASSCHENDAELE

60. At this date [end of October, 1917,] the need for the policy of activity outlined above had been still further emphasized by recent developments in Italy. Additional importance was given to it by the increasing probability that the time was approaching when the enemy's power of drawing reinforcements from Russia would increase considerably. In pursuance of this policy, therefore, two short advances were made on the 30th October and the 6th November, by which we gained possession of Passchendaele.

In the first operation Canadian and English troops attacked at 5.50 a.m. on a front extending from the Ypres-Roulers Railway to the Poelcappelle-Westroosebeke Road.

On the right the Canadians continued their advance along the high ground and reached the outskirts of Passchendaele, capturing an important position at Crest Farm on a small hill south-west of the village. Fighting was severe at all points, but particularly on the spur west of Passchendaele. Here no less than five strong counter-attacks were beaten off in the course of the day, our troops being greatly assisted by the fire of captured German machine guns in Crest Farm.

Farther north, battalions of the same London and Naval Divisions that had taken part in the attack on the 26th October again made progress wherever it was possible to find a way across the swamps. The almost impassable nature of the ground in this area, however, made movement practically impossible, and it was only on the main ridge that much could be effected.

During the succeeding days small advances were made by night south-west of Passchendaele, and a hostile attack on both sides of the Ypres-Roulers Railway was successfully repulsed.

At 6 a.m. on the 6th November, Canadian troops renewed their attack and captured the village of Passchendaele, together with the high ground immediately to the north and north-west. Sharp fighting took place for the possession of "pill-boxes" in the

northern end of the village, around Mosselmarkt, and on the Goudberg Spur. All objectives were gained at an early hour, and at 8.50 a.m. a hostile counter-attack north of Passchendaele was beaten off.

Over 400 prisoners were captured in this most successful attack, by which for the second time within the year Canadian troops achieved a record of uninterrupted success. Four days later, in extremely unfavourable weather, British and Canadian troops attacked northwards from Passchendaele and Goudberg, and captured further ground on the main ridge, after heavy fighting.

GENERAL REVIEW

61. These operations concluded our Flanders offensive for the time being, although considerable activity was still continued for another fortnight for purposes already explained.

This offensive, maintained for three and a half months under the most adverse conditions of weather, had entailed almost super-human exertions on the part of the troops of all arms and services. The enemy had done his utmost to hold his ground, and in his endeavours to do so had used up no less than seventy-eight divisions, of which eighteen had been engaged a second or third time in the battle, after being withdrawn to rest and refit. Despite the magnitude of his efforts, it was the immense natural difficulties, accentuated manifold by the abnormally wet weather, rather than the enemy's resistance, which limited our progress and prevented the complete capture of the ridge.

What was actually accomplished under such adverse conditions is the most conclusive proof that, given a normally fine August, the capture of the whole ridge, within the space of a few weeks, was well within the power of the men who achieved so much. They advanced every time with absolute confidence in their power to overcome the enemy, even though they had sometimes to struggle through mud up to their waists to reach him. So long as they could reach him they did overcome him, but physical exhaustion placed narrow limits on the depth to which each advance could be pushed, and compelled long pauses between the advances. The full fruits of each success were consequently not always obtained. Time after time the practically beaten enemy was enabled to reorganise and relieve his men and to bring up reinforcements behind the sea of mud which constituted his main protection.

Notwithstanding the many difficulties, much has been achieved. Our captures in Flanders since the commencement of operations at the end of July amount to 24,065 prisoners, 74 guns, 941 machine guns and 138 trench mortars. It is certain that the enemy's losses considerably exceeded ours. Most important of all, our new and hastily trained armies have shown once again that they are capable of meeting and beating the enemy's best troops, even under conditions which favoured his defence to a degree which required the greatest endurance, determination and heroism to overcome.

LUDENDORFF ON GERMAN MORALE (1917)

“ The (German) troops had borne the continuous defensive with extreme difficulty. Skulkers were already numerous. They reappeared as soon as the battle was over, and it had become quite common for divisions which came out of action with desperately low effectives to be considerably stronger after only a few days. Against the weight of the enemy's material the troops no longer displayed their old stubbornness; they thought with horror of fresh defensive battles and longed for the war of movement. . . . There had been incidents, too, which indicated that their cohesion was no longer the same.”

APPENDIX VII

TABLE OF EVENTS

- 1916.
- Jan. 9. Gallipoli finally evacuated.
,, 24. German attack near Nieuport.
,, 27. German attack on British near Loos repulsed.
- Feb. 12. Heavy fighting at Pilkem.
,, 19. Continued German attacks near Ypres.
,, 21. Beginning of German attack on Verdun.
,, 25. Fort Douaumont (Verdun) captured by Germans.
,, 26. French counter-attack at Fort Douaumont.
- Mar. 2. British success at Ypres. Verdun fighting continued.
,, 9. Fort Vaux fight (Verdun).
,, 20. Fighting at Verdun continued.
,, 27. British success at St Eloi.
- April 6. Fighting at Verdun and at St Eloi.
,, 11. Germans attack at Verdun: and at Albert.
,, 22. British success at Ypres.
,, 24. French success at Verdun.
,, 29. Fighting on British front.
,, 29. Surrender of General Townshend and 8,000 men at Kut.
- May 4. Fighting at Verdun.
,, 4-9. Fighting at Verdun (Hill 304).
,, 10. German reverse at Verdun.
,, 11. Germans seize British trenches at Vermelles.
,, 12. British regain some trenches at Vermelles.
,, 15. Fighting for Vimy Ridge.
,, 17. Fresh German attacks at Verdun.
,, 21. Germans seize Mort Homme (Verdun): German success at Vimy Ridge.
,, 29. Big German attack at Verdun; French line resists successfully.
,, 31. Battle of Jutland.
- June 1. Fierce fighting for Fort Vaux (Verdun).
,, 2. German attack on Canadians at Ypres.
,, 3. Canadian counter-attack.
,, 5. Lord Kitchener drowned in H.M.S. *Hampshire*.
,, 5. Fighting at Hooge.

1916.

- June** 7. Germans in possession of Fort Vaux.
 " 11. Renewed German attacks near Verdun.
 " 13. Canadians regain lost ground at Ypres.
 " 18. Fresh German attacks at Mort Homme.
 " 22. German success at Verdun; enemy only 3 miles from the
 city.
 " 24. British artillery very active.
 " 25. British raid German trenches.
 " 27. More British raids.
 " 28. German lines heavily bombarded.
 " 30. French regain Thiaumont.
 " 30. German lines heavily bombarded.
- July** 1. Allied offensive on the Somme begins: British take
 Mametz and other places: French advance.
 " 2. Fricourt captured; French occupy Curlu and Frise.
 " 3. Fighting for Ovillers, Contalmaison, and La Boisselle.
 " 4. Capture of La Boisselle.
 " 7. Capture of Contalmaison.
 " 8. Fighting for Ovillers and in Trônes Wood: British
 successes. French outside Peronne.
 " 10. Heavy fighting in Trônes Wood.
 " 11. Germans driven from Trônes Wood.
 " 12. British gain Mametz Wood: counter-attacks on Contal-
 maison repulsed.
 " 14. New Somme attack opens. German second line from
 Bazentin-le-Petit to Longueval taken. British cavalry
 in action.
 " 15. Desperate struggle in Delville Wood.
 " 19. Fighting in Delville Wood. Advance near Thiepval.
 " 22. Attack on Pozières.
 " 23. Attack on Guillemont fails.
 " 26. Capture of Pozières.
 " 27. British successes in Delville Wood and at Longueval.
 " 28. Longueval captured.
 " 30. French success near Hardecourt.
 " 31. Fight for Guillemont.
- Aug.** 1. Fighting at Verdun.
 " 3. British success near Bazentin.
 " 5. British line advanced near Pozières.
 " 8. Allied advance towards Guillemont.
 " 14. Fighting at Pozières.
 " 17. Advance near Guillemont.
 " 18. Great British attack near Thiepval.
 " 19. Capture of Thiepval Ridge.
 " 20. Big German counter-attack near Thiepval.
 " 21. More German counter-attacks near Thiepval.
 " 24. British nearer Thiepval.

1916.

- Aug. 26. German counter-attack near Thiepval.
 „ 27. Italy declares war on Germany.
 „ 30. Hindenburg succeeds Falkenhayn as Chief of the Imperial General Staff.
 „ 31. Fierce German counter-attacks at High Wood repulsed.
- Sept. 3. Guillemont taken: Ginchy taken and lost. Fighting at Verdun.
 „ 5. British capture Leuze Wood: French advance on a twelve-mile front, taking 2,700 prisoners.
 „ 9. Ginchy taken by British.
 „ 12. Intense preparatory bombardment by British.
 „ 14. Strong positions near Thiepval taken.
 „ 15. Great British attack; tanks in action for first time; Courcellette, Flers, and Martinpuich taken.
 „ 16. German counter-attacks at Courcellette and Flers: more British successes.
 „ 20. French success at Verdun.
 „ 26. Capture of Combles and Thiepval.
 „ 28. Capture of Schwaben Redoubt.
- Oct. 2. German success at Eaucourt l'Abbaye.
 „ 3. British recover Eaucourt l'Abbaye.
 „ 7. Le Sars taken.
 „ 8. French success at Sailly-Saillisel.
 „ 10. French success near Chaulnes.
 „ 16. French enter Sailly-Saillisel.
 „ 18. Great French advance.
 „ 20. Failure of German counter-attacks.
 „ 21. Strong enemy positions near Thiepval gained.
 „ 24. Great French success at Verdun. Douaumont re-taken with 3,500 prisoners.
 „ 26. Continued French successes at Verdun.
- Nov. 1. Germans abandon Fort Vaux (Verdun).
 „ 12. French capture Saillisel.
 „ 13. British attack on the Ancre. Beaumont Hamel and 3,300 prisoners taken.
 „ 14. Another British advance; Beaumont captured.
 „ 15. German counter-attacks defeated.
 „ 16. Further British advance on the Ancre.
 „ 17. Further British advance on the Ancre.
 „ 18. Further British advance on the Ancre.
- Dec. 12. General Nivelle succeeds General Joffre.
 „ 15. French success at Verdun; 8,000 prisoners taken.
 16/18. Further French success at Verdun.
 „ 29. Fighting at Verdun.
 „ 31. Fighting in Champagne.

1917.

- Jan.** 1. German attack on Verdun.
 ,, 8. Activity on British front. Russian success near Riga.
 ,, 9. British gain at Beaumont Hamel.
 ,, 15. French front active. Fighting in Rumania.
 ,, 23. Trench raiding by British, French and Germans.
 ,, 30. Fighting at Verdun and near Soissons.
- Feb.** 1. British raid near Gueudecourt. British success near Kut.
 ,, 3. President Wilson breaks off diplomatic relations with Germany.
 ,, 4. Fighting near Beaucourt. Further British success at Kut.
 ,, 7. British occupy Grandcourt.
 ,, 10. British success near Beaucourt.
 ,, 15. German success in Champagne.
 ,, 17. British advance on the Ancre.
 ,, 25. British advance on the wide front on the Ancre. Serre and Miraumont taken.
 ,, 26. Further British advances on the Ancre.
 ,, 27. British advance towards Bapaume: Gommecourt occupied.
- Mar.** 4. British advance near Péronne: German attacks at Verdun.
 ,, 5. French recover ground at Verdun.
 ,, 8. Death of Count Zeppelin. French success in Champagne.
 ,, 11. British occupy Bagdad.
 ,, 13. Big British advance near Bapaume.
 ,, 14. Further advance near Bapaume.
 ,, 15. The Tsar abdicates.
 ,, 17. British occupy Bapaume. French advance towards St Quentin.
 ,, 18. German retreat on a wide front. British occupy Nesle, Péronne, and Chaulnes, and over 60 villages. German attack at Verdun.
 ,, 19. British and French advance continues: over 40 villages taken.
 ,, 21. Advance continued.
 ,, 22. German attacks near St Quentin.
 ,, 25. French and British close to St Quentin.
 26/31. More villages retaken.
- April 1/5.** Allied successes near St Quentin.
 ,, 6. United States declares war on Germany.
 ,, 7. British attack near Cambrai. Fighting near Rheims. British force attacks Zeebrugge.
 ,, 9. British attack on a big front, from Lens to St Quentin. Canadians take Vimy Ridge; 9,000 prisoners taken.
 ,, 10. Advance near Arras continued.

1917.

- April 11. Further British successes.
 „ 14. Positions near Lens seized.
 „ 15. Small German success near Lagnicourt.
 „ 16. French advance between Rheims and Soissons; 10,000 prisoners taken.
 „ 18. Further French progress on the Aisne.
 „ 21. British success on the Scarpe.
 „ 23. British attack near Arras.
 24-26. Further British successes.
 „ 28. Further British successes near Arras.
 „ 29. British success near Oppy.
 „ 30. French success in Champagne.
- May 1. French advance on a six-mile front. British success in Mesopotamia.
 „ 3. British attack near Arras. Fresnoy taken.
 „ 4. British progress near St Quentin. French success at Rheims.
 „ 5. French advance beyond Aisne on a twenty-mile front; 6,000 prisoners taken. British success near Lens.
 „ 8. Germans regain Fresnoy.
 „ 12. British successes near Arras.
 „ 14. British capture Roeux.
 „ 15. Fighting at Roeux and Bullecourt. General Pétain succeeds General Nivelle as commander of the French armies.
 „ 17. British take Bullecourt. Italian successes on the Isonzo.
 „ 20. British success near Bullecourt. French success in Champagne.
 „ 26. Fighting on the Carso; further Italian progress.
- June 2. Successful British attack near Lens.
 „ 3. Heavy fighting near Lens: British progress checked.
 „ 5. Fighting near Lens and south of the Scarpe.
 „ 6. Fighting on the Scarpe; German positions captured.
 „ 7. Great British attack; Messines Ridge and 5,000 prisoners captured.
 „ 8. German counter-attacks at Messines repulsed. British success between Lens and La Bassée.
 „ 12. Further British successes beyond Messines.
 „ 14. Another British attack near Messines; much ground gained.
 „ 15. British progress near Bullecourt.
 „ 18. French success in Champagne.
 „ 24. British progress near Lens.
 „ 26. British progress near Lens.
 „ 30. More British progress near Lens.

1917.

- July 3. German attack near Craonne (Aisne) beaten off by French.
- ,, 8. Further German attacks beaten off: heavy losses inflicted.
- ,, 10. German attack near Lombartzyde.
- ,, 14. French make successful attack at Moronvillers.
- ,, 17. French attack Mort Homme.
- ,, 19. Heavy German attack near Craonne.
- ,, 22. German attack renewed.
- ,, 23. Russian armies in Galicia collapse.
- ,, 23. Desperate bombardment by both French and German guns.
- ,, 24. French regain lost ground.
- 24/29. Repeated unsuccessful German attacks; French positions near Craonne retained.
- ,, 27. British and French troops cross the Yser Canal in front of Boesinghe.
- ,, 31. Third Battle of Ypres opens. Hooge, Pilckem, Bixschoote, Klein Zillebeke taken; over 6,000 prisoners.
- Aug. 1. Heavy rainfall holds up attack.
- ,, 2. Brussilov dismissed from command of Russian Armies; Kornilov succeeds him.
- ,, 3. St Julien reoccupied by British.
- ,, 10. British capture Westhoek.
- ,, 15. Canadians capture Hill 70, and outskirts of Lens.
- ,, 16. Second stage of battle opens; Langemarck captured: enemy "pill-boxes" hold up attack near St Julien; advance near Glencorse Wood.
- ,, 19. Rumanian Army hard pressed on the Sereth.
- 19/22/27. British advance between St Julien and the Ypres-Roulers Railway: "pill-boxes" take heavy toll.
- ,, 20. Pétain launches great French attack near Verdun.
- 20/26. Continued French successes near Verdun.
- ,, 27. French in possession of all objectives on a 16-mile front.
- 17/31. Almost continuous rainfall makes Ypres battlefield a morass.
- Sept. 3. Russians evacuate Riga.
- ,, 8. French improve position at Verdun.
- ,, 10. Russian Government proclaims Kornilov a traitor.
- ,, 20. Third stage of Ypres battle opens: ground knee-deep in mud; general advance along whole front; Inverness Copse captured; 3,000 prisoners taken; Germans make eleven counter-attacks.
- ,, 21. More German counter-attacks.
- ,, 25. More German counter-attacks.
- ,, 26. New British attack; Zonnebeke and Polygon Wood captured; many German counter-attacks.
- ,, 30. Germans counter-attack with flammenwerfer.

218 16th (Service) Battalion Northumberland Fusiliers

1917.

- Oct. 3. German counter-attacks.
 ,, 4. Further British attack; big German counter-attack caught in barrage; all objectives gained and considerable losses inflicted on enemy; Poelcappelle entered; Broodseinde, Reutel, and Polderhoek Château captured; over 5,000 prisoners; eight German counter-attacks broken.
 5/8. Heavy rainfall.
 ,, 9. British and French attack renewed; Veldhoek, Koekuit, Mangelaare and Poelcappelle captured.
 ,, 12. British progress near Houthulst Forest.
 ,, 12. German Fleet lands force in Gulf of Riga; mutiny on Russian warships.
 ,, 17. Pétain commences bombardment for second stage of French offensive near Chemin des Dames.
 ,, 22. British advance east of Poelcappelle.
 ,, 23. French attack launched; immediate and unbroken success; advance $2\frac{1}{4}$ miles on a 4-mile front; 8,000 prisoners taken.
 24/27. Continued successes by French.
 ,, 26. British advance near Gheluvelt.
 27/28. French and Belgians clear the "Mœrckem peninsula."
 ,, 30. Attack on Passchendaele village by Canadians.
Nov. 2. French win the Heights of the Aisne.
 ,, 5. Military Revolutionary Committee endeavours to take over the affairs of Russia.
 ,, 6. Canadians take whole of Passchendaele.
 ,, 7. Lenin "arrives"; proclamation of Soviet Government; Kerenski flees; Red Guards capture the Winter Palace.
 ,, 10. Canadians capture the Goudberg Spur; the Passchendaele Ridge entirely in British hands.

APPENDIX VIII

16TH NORTHUMBERLAND FUSILIERS COMRADES' LEAGUE

At a meeting of Past and Present Members of the 16th (Service) Battalion Northumberland Fusiliers (1st "Commercials") held in the Health Food Restaurant, Northumberland Street, Newcastle-on-Tyne, on Friday, 15th November, 1918 (Lieutenant-Colonel W. H. Ritson, C.M.G., V.D., presiding), this Comrades' League was formed, and the Objects and Rules adopted, and the officers and Committee appointed.

All Past and Present Members of the Battalion are cordially invited to join the League.

President :

Lieut.-Col. W. H. RITSON, C.M.G., V.D.

Vice-Presidents :

Lieut.-Col. A. J. SCULLY, M.C.

Lieut.-Col. A. W. LITTLE.

Major A. ARCHER.

Major J. TALBOT.

Hon. Treasurer :

Sergt. J. W. SUMMERS,
71 Wingrove Gardens, Newcastle-on-Tyne.

*Hon. Secretary : **

Mr T. M. MCBRYDE,
Exchange Buildings, Newcastle-on-Tyne
(Secretary of the Military Committee of the Newcastle and
Gateshead Chamber of Commerce),
(to whom all communications should be addressed).

Committee :

Major E. THOMPSON.

Sergt. V. S. MILLS.

Sergt. W. F. DODD.

* The Hon. Secretary is now: Mr F. W. Grieve, 90 Malcolm Street, Heston.

Committee—contd.

R.S.M. J. MCPHERSON.	
Cpl. J. T. W. PENMAN.	
C.S.M. S. B. F. SAVILL.	
Pte. J. H. GUSTARD.	
Pte. H. TAYLOR.	
Sergt. J. W. SUMMERS	} <i>ex-officio.</i>
Mr T. M. MCBRYDE	

OBJECTS OF THE LEAGUE

1. To maintain comradeship amongst those of all ranks who have served in the 16th (Service) Battalion Northumberland Fusiliers.
2. To hold a Reunion at least once a year.
3. To take such steps in the interests of Past Members of the Battalion and their dependents as may be found desirable.

RULES

1. The Society shall be known as the 16th NORTHUMBERLAND FUSILIERS COMRADES' LEAGUE.

2. All who have served in the 16th (Service) Battalion Northumberland Fusiliers shall be eligible for membership.

3. Members and Officials of the Newcastle and Gateshead Chamber of Commerce Military Committee, and other gentlemen who have been intimately associated with the raising and administration of the Battalion during the Great War, shall be eligible for Hon. Membership.

4. Except so far as otherwise provided in these Rules or by resolution of a General Meeting, the affairs of the League shall be managed by a Committee to be appointed annually by the members at the Annual General Meeting of the League, the Committee to hold office until the next Annual meeting.

5. The Committee shall consist of not less than 5, nor more than 9 members, exclusive of *ex-officio* members, and shall have power to add to its numbers up to the limit of 9 ordinary members.

6. All applications for Membership of the League to be sent to the Hon. Secretary for approval of the Committee.

7. Each Member shall pay an annual subscription of 2/- to the Funds of the League (in addition to cost of Suppers, etc., which he attends).

8. The Funds shall be vested in and controlled by the Committee, which shall have full power (subject to any directions of a General Meeting) to apply them as they may think fit for carrying out the objects of the League.



Drawn by:

SUMMARY OF THE HISTORY.

[C. Wade, 16th Bn.

9. A General Meeting of the Members shall be held in Newcastle in each calendar year.

10. The Officers of the League, consisting of the President, the Vice-Presidents, Hon. Treasurer and Hon. Secretary, shall be elected by an Annual General Meeting, and shall be *ex-officio* Members of the Committee.

11. The Committee shall present an Annual Report and Balance Sheet at each Annual General Meeting.

12. The Committee shall appoint its own Chairman.

November, 1918.

APPENDIX IX

NEWCASTLE AND GATESHEAD INCORPORATED CHAMBER OF COMMERCE

President: The Right Hon. LORD JOICEY, D.L., D.C.L., J.P.
HERBERT SHAW, D.L., J.P., Secretary, Chamber of Commerce.

THE MILITARY COMMITTEE, 1914—1919.

MAJOR R. TEMPERLEY, O.B.E., T.D., D.L., Chairman.

GEORGE RENWICK, D.L., J.P., M.P., Vice-Chairman.

[THE LATE C. W. C. HENDERSON, First Hon. Treasurer.]

A. MUNRO SUTHERLAND, J.P. } Joint Honorary Treasurers.
H. E. ANDERSON }

DANIEL STEPHENS, Chairman, Finance Committee.

F. B. FENWICK, Chairman, Clothing Committee.

H. E. ANDERSON, Chairman, Dependents Committee.

ROBERT EELES, Chairman, Reception Committee.

F. CARRICK, Chairman, Comforts Committee.

ALFRED BREWIS, Chairman, Histories Committee.

WALTER ARMSTRONG.

J. H. BECKINGHAM, J.P.

E. L. BECKINGHAM, J.P.

MAJOR B. BRYANT, M.C.

T. M. CLAGUE.

F. CLARK.

[THE LATE W. CROSSING]

R. S. DALGLEISH.

COL. H. A. ERSKINE, C.B.E.,

C.B., C.M.G., T.D.

EVANS FAWCUS.

A. J. FENWICK.

GERALD FRANCE, M.P.

L. GEIPEL.

R. M. GLOVER, J.P.

W. R. HEATLEY, O.B.E.

J. S. HINDLEY.

REUBEN HODGSON.

CHARLES IRWIN, J.P.

F. W. KINGSTON.

G. DE LORIOI.

SIR GEORGE LUNN, J.P.

E. R. NEWBIGIN, J.P.

MAJOR GEORGE PARKINSON.

CAPTAIN C. E. PUMPHREY, M.C.

J. REAH.

LIEUT.-COL. W. H. RITSON,

C.M.G., V.D.

RICHARD ROBSON.

A. SCHOLEFIELD, J.P.

CLARENCE SMITH.

LIEUT.-COL. R. STEPHENSON,

C.B.E., D.S.O.

R. M. SUTTON.

MAJOR J. TALBOT.

RIDLEY WARHAM.

T. E. WEBB.

L. E. WOODS.

Committee Secretary: T. M. McBRIDE.

Hon. Secretary (1919): CAPTAIN R. H. WORTHINGTON, M.C.

THE LADIES' WORKING PARTY (COMFORTS COMMITTEE)

MRS GEO. RENWICK.

- MRS G. S. HUNTER.

„ ALFRED BREWIS.

- „ GEORGE JOICEY.

„ F. CARRICK.

- „ J. T. LUNN.

„ ROBERT EELES.

- „ H. J. RICHARDSON.

„ ROBERT HARRISON.

- „ W. H. RITSON.

MISS MARY ADAM, Hon. Secretary.

THE WORK OF THE MILITARY COMMITTEE

The 16th Battalion having been successfully raised, the Chamber pressed for authority to raise a second battalion, but it was not until 14th October that the request was granted, the authority from the War Office in this case being addressed, along with those for the first battalions of the Tyneside Scottish and Irish, to the Lord Mayor as nominal raiser. Recruiting commenced on 16th October, 1914, and was completed on 4th November. This was the 18th (Service) Battalion Northumberland Fusiliers, originally known as the Tyneside Battalion and afterwards as the 1st Tyneside Pioneers. It had its first headquarters at the Cricket Ground, Newcastle, and after training at Rothbury, Cramlington and Salisbury Plain, went under command of Lieutenant-Colonel J. Shakespear, C.I.E., D.S.O. (now C.M.G.), to France 7th January, 1916, as the Pioneer Battalion of the 34th Division. The record of this battalion is the first volume published of this series.

On the 16th November, 1914, the Chamber obtained War Office authority to raise a third battalion, and the numbers were completed on 1st December. This was the 19th (Service) Battalion Northumberland Fusiliers (2nd Tyneside Pioneers). This battalion, after training at Morpeth, Cramlington, Masham, and Salisbury Plain, proceeded to France under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel (now Colonel) F. W. Daniell, D.S.O., on 28th January, 1916. Their record, as Pioneer Battalion to the 35th Division, is the second volume published in this series.

The Military Committee also recruited *Depôt Companies* for each of the three battalions; the reserves of the 18th and 19th Battalions trained at Cramlington and Harrogate under Lieutenant-Colonel L. E. Fawcus, and formed the 28th (Reserve) Battalion Northumberland Fusiliers, while those of the 16th Battalion trained at Cramlington and Catterick Bridge and formed the 31st (Reserve) Battalion Northumberland Fusiliers.

The troops raised by the Chamber of Commerce thus numbered in all about 5,550.

The Military Committee (Chairman, Major R. Temperley; Vice-Chairman, Mr George Renwick) carried through the prolonged and arduous work of raising, organising and providing for the battalions by means of a series of Sub-Committees, as follows:

The Recruiting Committee (Chairman, Major Robert Temperley), whose success was largely due to the energy of Mr George Renwick and to the management of the Chamber's Recruiting Officers by Mr Lionel Woods and Mr Walter Armstrong.

The Clothing Committee (Chairman, Mr Fred B. Fenwick), which in circumstances of great pressure and difficulty, owing to the

phenomenal shortage of supplies, carried through or advised on the purchase of clothing, equipment, etc., amounting to some £50,000, which sum was in due course almost entirely recovered from the War Office.

The Billeting and Camp Committee (Chairman, Major Robert Temperley).—This Committee, of which Mr Richard Robson, Mr Robert Eeles and Mr A. M. Sutherland were very active members, arranged the headquarters for the three battalions while stationed in Newcastle, the hutments at Alnwick for the 16th and billeting schemes for the 18th at Rothbury, and the 19th at Morpeth, including the installation of cooking and sanitary requirements, baths, rifle-ranges, etc.

The Dependents Committee.—As soon as recruiting commenced this Committee was formed "To arrange that all dependents of soldiers in the battalions shall be properly looked after during the breadwinner's absence on military service," and the great success of its operations is due to its original Chairman, Mr W. R. Heatley, to his successors Mr J. S. Hindley and Mr H. E. Anderson, and to the Secretary, Mr T. M. McBryde.

The assistance given has in the main been to supplement the Army Separation Allowance where such assistance was considered necessary. At one time there were as many as fifteen hundred cases on the books, involving a weekly expenditure of about £240 or over £12,000 a year. The total expenditure of this Committee has been about £38,000, this sum being provided out of the Guarantee Funds subscribed by the members of the Chamber of Commerce and others.

The payments to dependents have been made through the post, except in large areas where the grants were personally distributed by lady voluntary workers. The Committee have kept in the closest possible touch with all the recipients of grants and have been able to advise the dependents on many points of difficulty. The Committee have been much gratified by the very numerous letters which have been received from both the dependents and soldiers expressing appreciation for the help received.

An important feature of this Committee's work has been their efforts to obtain for dependents (where known to the Committee) the maximum possible allowance from State Funds, and it may be mentioned that similar assistance has been given to dependents of men in other battalions than those raised by the Chamber of Commerce.

With the demobilisation of the three battalions this work has naturally diminished, although in many cases the Committee continue to give relief to widows and dependents of men who have fallen in action where circumstances are especially hard.

The Finance Committee (Chairman, Mr D. Stephens; Joint Hon. Treasurers, Mr H. E. Anderson and Mr A. M. Sutherland).—Under the Chairmanship originally of the late Mr Charles Henderson, the first Hon. Treasurer, this Committee acted as Paymaster on behalf of the Government for the clothing, equipment, stores, and other provisions for these troops until taken over by the War Office, and

has also been responsible for the judicious disposal of the "Guarantee Funds" raised by the Chamber (largely through the instrumentality of Mr R. M. Glover and other Committee men), by voluntary subscriptions, which amounted to about £44,653.*

The Comforts Committee (Chairman, Mr F. Carrick; Hon. Treasurer, Mr Alfred Brewis; Hon. Secretary, Mr Herbert Shaw) was formed in October, 1915, to send out to the men at the Front comforts as required and a regular supply of magazines and newspapers, etc. These, and the special gifts sent out at Christmas and St George's Day, have been much appreciated by the men. During four years the Ladies' Working Party (Miss Mary Adam, Hon. Secretary), with the assistance of numerous workers, including relatives of all ranks of the battalions, were able to send out 37,426 pairs of hand-knitted socks, in addition to other useful woollen articles. The sum of £1,860 was spent in the purchase of wool and £1,178 in the purchase of goods and in cash grants to the three

* The contracts for clothing, equipment, stores, etc., were made by the Sub-Committees concerned on the authority of the Military Committee, which, on behalf of the Chamber, guaranteed any excess which might ultimately not be authorised by the War Office. The monies for these expenditures were in due course drawn from the Army Paymaster and all items originally disallowed were eventually approved by the War Office, and where these had been paid by the Committee out of the "Guarantee Funds" the amount was refunded from Army Funds.

Thus though the Chamber incurred a great initial financial responsibility during the period of formation of the battalions, its ultimate unrecovered expenditure in respect of this period only amounted to about £5,294, which had been expended on outlay which may be legitimately regarded as outside the scope of War Office responsibility, viz.:—Officers' Kits, Gifts to Officers and Men, Travelling Expenses for Men, Extra Accommodation at Training Headquarters, Clothing and Equipment Extras, Extra Expenses of Recruiting, Salaries, Printing, Stationery, Postages, and Sundries. The balance (about £38,000) of the total "Guarantee Fund" (about £44,000) thus became applicable for grants to dependents, etc. See under the "*Dependents Committee*."

The 16th Battalion kept its own accounts; the battalion only once approached the Committee to get War Office authority for unauthorised expenditure (£380 for extra undervests) which was obtained.

The 18th Battalion kept its own accounts until April, 1915, when, as large sums had been disallowed by the Paymaster, they were handed over to the Committee, which ultimately received approval of this previously disallowed expenditure. On this battalion's account the Committee has drawn from Army Funds £11,192.

The 19th Battalion accounts were kept by the Committee throughout the period of formation, the total sum received from Army Funds being £17,139.

The funds administered by the Comforts, the Entertainments and the Reception and Histories Committees were raised by special subscription and were independent of the "Guarantee Funds."

The principal funds raised and administered by the Military Committee and its Sub-Committees may therefore be summarised as follows:

The "Guarantee Funds"—		£
Formation Expenses unrecoverable from Government	.	5,294
Grants to Dependents and Soldiers	.	39,359
Comforts Fund	.	3,038
Entertainment Fund	.	790
Reception and Histories Fund	.	about 2,000
Total		£50,481

Sundry minor subscriptions raised for purposes not here recorded will bring the aggregate up to about £51,000.

battalions and to the "Quayside" Company of the 9th Northumberland Fusiliers. These sums were provided by special subscriptions.

The Entertainments Committee (Chairman, Mr Robt. Eeles; Hon. Secretary, Mr T. M. McBryde) organised during the summer months (1915 to 1919) a series of garden parties and river trips (the latter on the launch lent by the Tyne Improvement Commission) for the wounded soldiers stationed at the local military hospitals.

To enable this scheme to be successfully carried out a sum of £790 was collected. The Committee have every reason to believe that both the greatest possible enjoyment and the highest beneficial effects were derived by the soldiers from these outings. They were conveyed to the garden parties in motor-cars provided by local ladies and gentlemen.

During the winter months, through the courtesy of the management and with the gratuitous assistance of the artistes of the local theatres, weekly indoor entertainments were provided at the Armstrong College and the Northumberland War Hospitals.

The total number of soldiers for whom entertainment was arranged is about thirty-one thousand.

The Reception Committee (Chairman, Mr Robert Eeles; Hon. Secretary, Captain Worthington).—This Committee was founded in 1919 to make arrangements for entertaining in a suitable manner the returned Officers, Non-Commissioned Officers and Men of the units raised by the Chamber. Through the instrumentality of Lieutenant-Colonel R. Stephenson, Major Bryant and Mr H. E. Anderson, a substantial sum has been collected from the members of the Chamber for this object and that of the Histories Committee.

The Histories Committee (Chairman, Mr Alfred Brewis) undertook the arrangements for the publication of the Histories of the three battalions raised by the Chamber and of the "Quayside" Company of the 9th Northumberland Fusiliers and the presentation of these volumes to the returned men and the next-of-kin of those who have fallen. These Histories are being compiled under the general editorship of the Chairman of this Committee.

Secretarial. On obtaining a post in a Government Department in London, Mr McBryde resigned his position of Committee Secretary and also the honorary secretaryships of the three Comrades' Leagues, founded in connection with each battalion. Thereupon Captain R. H. Worthington, M.C., late Adjutant of the 16th Battalion, accepted the appointment of Honorary Secretary for the purpose of the winding up of the varied activities of the Committee.

APPENDIX X

WAR OFFICE TRIBUTE

THE Lord Mayor of Newcastle received the following letter from the War Office:

WAR OFFICE, LONDON, S.W.,
31st December, 1918.

"MY LORD,—I forward the following brief statement of the services rendered to the country during the present hostilities by the 16th (Service) Battalion of the Northumberland Fusiliers (Newcastle), feeling sure that it will be of great interest to you and to all those connected with the regiment.

"The recent reorganisation of infantry in France involved the disbandment of certain battalions, amongst which is the 16th (Service) Battalion of the Northumberland Fusiliers.

"The battalion was formed in September, 1914, and after undergoing training in England, the battalion left Codford for France in November, 1915, landing at Boulogne on 23rd November. It was sent to the southern area held by our forces between Arras and the Somme, and trained there under the 18th Division.

"For the first six months of 1916 the Division was holding the line in the Thiépval neighbourhood, and attacked that place on 1st July. It was able on 12th July to repulse a counter-attack near Ovillers. It was then sent to the Cambrin area, and was there at Cuinchy till the end of October, when it returned to the Somme, and was employed against the Schwaben Redoubt on 19th November.

"During the winter of 1916-17 it was at Courcelles and at Beaumont Hamel, making a successful local attack on 10th February, and repulsing a counter-attack next day.

"In March, the battalion took part in the advance across the territory evacuated by the Germans, being in touch with the French on the right, moving by Nesle to Offoy. It was in the line opposite St Quentin in April, but moved to Flanders in June, being posted in the coast sector near Nieuport. The battalion was employed in assisting the 11th Borderers during the German attack on the Lombartzyde Salient on 10th July, and received the congratulations of the Corps Commander on their conduct. They remained in this area till October, carrying out two successful raids and repulsing a German attack. In November they were moved to a position nearer Ypres, and made a small advance on 16th December. They were still in the Ypres Salient in February, 1918, when the battalion was disbanded, being distributed between

228 16th (Service) Battalion Northumberland Fusiliers

the four Territorial Force Battalions of the Northumberland Fusiliers.

“ In every engagement in which this battalion took part it upheld the brilliant and glorious traditions of the Northumberland Fusiliers to which it belonged.

“ Battalions of this regiment have served in all quarters of the globe, and have taken part in such historic battles as Wilhelmstahl, St Lucia (1778), Rolica, Vimiera, Corunna, Busaco, Ciudad Rodrigo, Badajoz, Salamanca, Vittoria, Nivelle, Orthes, Toulouse, Peninsula, Lucknow, Khartoum, and in the campaigns in Afghanistan (1878-80) and South Africa (1899-1902), taking part in the battle of Modder River.

“ Although the 16th Battalion has been disbanded, the officers, warrant officers, non-commissioned officers, and the men have not been lost to the Northumberland Fusiliers; they have all been drafted into other battalions of the Northumberland Fusiliers, and will continue to uphold the name and traditions of this regiment with the same spirit, loyalty, and *esprit-de-corps* as they have done in the 16th (Service) Battalion.—Yours, etc.,

G. M. W. MACDONOGH, *Lieutenant-General*,

“ Adjutant-General to the Forces.”

AFTERWORD

IN any History of the War which aims at giving an adequate idea of that terrible struggle, there is little room for any description of the doings of a battalion. The Division was the tactical unit, and a battalion was only a small portion of a Division, though in itself a battalion was large. It began with a thousand men, each one the centre of hopes. Many fell, many were wounded, many were transferred to other units, and some were ordered to return to civilian life. In all, during its career from September, 1914, to February, 1918, the 16th Battalion Northumberland Fusiliers had on its strength no less than 8,000 men.

It is well that some record of the daily life of the battalion should be written. There are many scattered over England, and more especially in Northumberland and Durham, to whom the name of the 16th Northumberland Fusiliers will ever be associated with pride, and to those who mourn for loved ones this presentation of our daily life and work may bring some small meed of comfort to lighten the gloom which can never be wholly dispelled. To those who survived and count themselves fortunate in being able to look back on the grim deeds of war, this volume will, I hope, revive happy memories and will help to keep fresh the many bonds of friendship.

As Colonel of the battalion during the first two years of its existence I have, at the risk of reiteration, to say once more how grateful all the members of the battalion are, and have ever been, to the Chamber of Commerce for all the sympathy and practical help which we always received at the hands of Major R. Temperley, O.B.E., T.D., D.L., and the members of the Military Committee, of the Comforts Committee, and of the Dependents' Committee. We can never forget their unfailing encouragement under all circumstances. In the compilation of the history we have to congratulate ourselves on the exceedingly able manner in which Captain C. H. Cooke, M.C., of the 19th Battalion, has performed his work as Editor, and we can never sufficiently appreciate the keen thoroughness with which he has accomplished his task. He has as much reason to be proud of the result of his indefatigable

labour as we have satisfaction in seeing the mass of individual efforts blended into what is such a readable volume.

We greatly appreciate the honour which General Sir C. D. Shute, K.C.B., K.C.M.G., is good enough to confer upon the battalion by his eulogistic Foreword, and we are delighted to have such an excellent Appreciation from our Brigadier, General C. Yatman, C.M.G., D.S.O., with whom we went through the vicissitudes of the greater part of our service. To have gained the approval of two such distinguished fighting soldiers makes us prouder than ever of having done our bit as a battalion of the "Fighting Fifth."

We have a great tradition to maintain, and I hope that we will one and all do our best to preserve in civil life the sympathy, friendship, and mutual confidence with which we were animated during our War Service, and that nothing will be wanting on our part to keep alive the high ideals for which our fallen comrades, facing the enemy, made the supreme sacrifice. I feel that our Comrades' League should be a very real bond between us, and I trust that its influence for good may be strengthened by the adherence and support of all who served with us.

A handwritten signature in dark ink, appearing to read 'W. R. Atkinson', with a long horizontal stroke extending to the right.

Lieutenant-Colonel,
Late commanding 16th Northumberland Fusiliers.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

SIR DOUGLAS HAIG's Despatches.

"From Private to Field-Marshal."—ROBERTSON.

"My War Memories."—LUDENDORFF.

"General Headquarters and its Critical Decisions."—FALKENHAYN.

"La vérité sur l'offensive du 16 avril 1917."—PAINLEVÉ.

"Experiences of a Dug-Out."—CALLWELL.

"Comment finit la Guerre."—GENERAL MANGIN.

"The Last Four Months."—MAURICE.

"At the Supreme War Council."—WRIGHT.

"The Fifth Army in March, 1918."—W. SHAW SPARROW.

"The First World War."—COLONEL REPINGTON.

"The Tragedy of Lord Kitchener."—LORD ESHER.

"The Battles of the Somme."—SIR PHILIP GIBBS.

"From Bapaume to Passchendaele."—SIR PHILIP GIBBS.

"1914."—FIELD-MARSHAL VISCOUNT FRENCH OF YPRES.

INDEX

- ALBERT**, description of, 29
 —, return to, 30
 —, the Brickfields, 54
Alembon, rest at, 90
Alnwick, arrival at, 9
Amiens, 62
 —, visits to, 39
Amplier, 59
 —, huts at, 54
Ancre River, 30
Annezin, crater-crossing competition at, 53
Anzacs, 2nd Corps, 78
Applicants for Commissions, 5
 — Squad, 185
Archer, Major A., Second-in-Command, 31
Armstrong, R.Q.M.S., receives D.C.M., 78
Arthur's Keep, 51
Ashburner, Brigadier-General, takes over the Brigade, 62
 —, General, dines with battalion, 75
Athies, rest billets, 75
Audruicq, 90
Authuille, 32
Aveluy, 38
 — Wood, 43
Avery, Second-Lieutenant, and scouts, 18

BAIRD, LIEUTENANT, at Ten Tree Alley, 66
 —, —, awarded M.C., 67
Baizieux, attack scheme practised, 39
 —, practise-attacks, 41
Ballantyne, Corporal J., gallantry of, 31
Barnes, Major-General, inspects the battalion, 62
 —, Sergeant B. K., gallantry of, 31
 —, —, awarded D.C.M., 40
Bath City football match, 21
Battalion Headquarters hit by shell, 84
Bebby, W. H., presentation to, 6
Bedfords, 7th Battalion, 26, 27
Beaufort, 69
Beaumont Hamel, 64, 65, 203
Beauval, 49
Bethune, arrival at, 49

Bethune Church Parade, 50
Black Horse Bridge, 33, 38, 40, 43
Bleu, in reserve, 78
Bonneville, 61
Borders, 11th Battalion, raid the enemy, 40
Border Regiment, 11th, 82
Boulogne, 23
Bourdon, 25
Bouzincourt, 33, 37
Brigade, 96th Infantry, formed, 16
 —, 97th Infantry, appreciates work done by battalion, 68
 —, 97th, attack by, 88
 —, 122nd Infantry, 10
 —, —, at Cramlington, 14
 —, —, dispersed, 16

CAESTRE, detrain at, 78
Cambrin Sector, 51
Camon, 69
Canal Bank, 90
Cardonnette, 25
Carr, Corporal Ben, produces a revue, 37
 —, Editor of *The Growler*, 192
Catterick Bridge Camp, 17
Chamber of Commerce, 2, 61, 62, 91
Cheverton, Major F. J., 18
 "Citadel," 27
Citizens' Training League, 1
Clarence Street School, 9, 188
Codford St Mary, 19
Collins, Second-Lieutenant, 89
Composite Battalion, 7, 10, 187, 188
Contay, 69
Cookson, Clive, 1
Coxye, 80, 86
Cramlington, 13
Crawford, Lieutenant-Colonel J., D.S.O., 30
Cronin, Sergeant-Drummer, 9
Cross-country run, Codford, 21
 —, Pierregot, 38
Crucifix Corner, 34
Cuinchy Sector, 53

D.L.I., 18th BATTALION, 10
Darley, Sergeant, 19
Darlington, sports at, 19
Depôt Companies formed, 16
Dernancourt, 26, 27
Diamond Wood, 40

- Diéval, 54
 Dirty Bucket Camp, 9
 Division, 18th, 26, 28
 —, 19th, 56
 —, 32nd, 16
 Domqueur, 24
 Dorsets, 1st Battalion, 58
 Dyer, Captain G. W. (Royal West Surrey), 10, 11

E2 SECTOR, 29
 Edwards, Lieutenant, leaves with transport for France, 22
 Ellis, Sergeant, 81
 —, Lance-Corporal R. W., 29
 Elverdinghe, 91, 92

" F " SECTOR, 32
 Fayet, 74
 Flixecourt, 25
 Folkestone, 22
 French Infantry, 141st, relieved by battalion, 78

G2 SECTOR, 30
 Gemmel Trench, 44
 George, Lieutenant F. A., goes to R.F.O., 42
 —, —, visits battalion, 55
 German defences, 199
 Gordons, 2nd Battalion, relieve us, 59
 Gourock Street, 44
 Graham, Captain P. G., 44
 Guillaucourt, 78

H.I.L.I., 17TH BATTALION, 47
 Haig, Sir Douglas, 31
 Ham, 73
 Hamilton, General Sir Bruce, visits camp, 18
 Hamilton Avenue, 44
 " Happy Valley," 27
 Harris, Second-Lieutenant, 35
 Hare, Captain W. T., R.A.M.O., 46
 Harvey, Captain, appointed to Divisional Staff, 34
 Hedauville, 46
 Hérisart, 56
 Hodgson, G., 6
 Hood, Q.M.S., 89
 " Horace to Hypatia," 189, 190
 Houthulst Forest, 88
 Hindenburg Line, 71
 Hippodrome, 6, 15
 His Majesty the King at Coxyde, 80
 Hubner Farm, 90
 Hunter, Brigadier-General Gunning, O.B., 10, 14

INNISKILLINGS, 2nd Battalion, relieved, 43
 Inspection, Newcastle, 7
 — by H.M. the King, 15
 — by Lieutenant-General Lawson, 15

 Inspection by Chamber of Commerce, 15
 — by General Yatman, Oodford, 20
 — by Corps Commander, 91
 Irish Farm, 89, 91

JEANNIOT CAMP, 83, 84
 Johnson, Major A. A., 1, 75

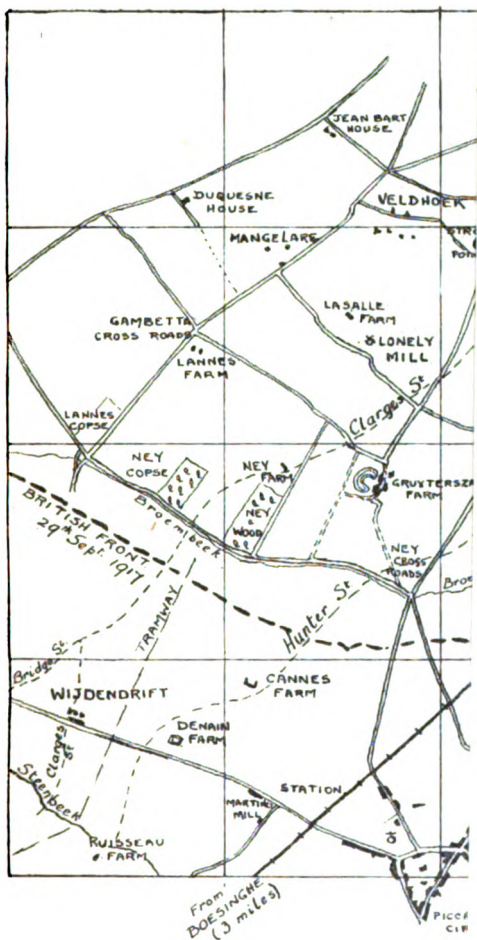
K.O.Y.L.I., 2ND BATTALION, 51
 King, Lieutenant, 53, 72
 Kitchener, Field-Marshal Lord, 15
 Knott, Major J. Leadbitter, D.S.O., 1
 Knight's Redoubt, 42, 43

LA BEUVRIÈRE, 49
 La Buissière, 49
 Lancashire Fusiliers, 15th Battalion, 17, 39
 —, 16th Battalion, 17, 34
 —, 19th Battalion, 17, 30
 Leake, Major, 20
 Lealvillers, 67
 Leipzig Salient, 200
 Le Plouy, 24
 Lindsay, Captain D., 29, 67, 85
 Little, Major A. W., 31, 49, 70
 Lombartzyde, 83, 85, 207
 Longpré, 24
 Lumsden, Major F. W., D.S.O., 74
 Lunn, Captain W., 62, 75

MAILLY-MAILLET, 57, 58
 Maison Grise Sap, 44
 Malo les Bains, 78, 86
 Manchester, 2nd Battalion, 93
 Martinsart, 30
 Matigny, 74
 Méaulte, 26, 27
 Meetcheele-Mosselmarkt Road, 88
 Messines, 78, 205, 206, 207
 Military Committee, 2, 6
 — visits battalion, 21
 Millencourt, 30
 Monkseaton, 18
 Mosselmarkt, 210
 Mount Keep, 30
 Mouquet Farm, 54
 Mouquet Switch, 39
 Munro, General, at Bethune, 50

NAPIER, CAPTAIN, at Millencourt, 31
 Nesbit, Captain G., 27
 Nesle, 71
 Newton, R. H., 1
 Nieuport, 78, 80, 81, 82, 86
 Noble, Sir W. J., J.P., 1
 Northumberland, Duke of, inspects battalion, 31
 Northumberland Fusiliers—
 6th Battalion, 6
 9th Battalion, 2
 17th Battalion, 3, 17, 32
 18th Battalion, 10
 19th Battalion, 10

- O'BRIEN, SERGEANT-MAJOR A. S., 5
 Offoy, 72
 Ostrahove Camp, 23
 Ovimers-la-Boisselle, 47
 Ovimers, 200
- PARVILLERS, 71
 Passchendaele, 88, 209
 Penman, Private, 11
 Pierregot, 37
 Poelcappelle, 92
 Popham, Captain R. S., D.S.O., 17
 Popple, Second-Lieutenant, 41
 Porter, Lieutenant O. W., 23, 39
 "Potiphar," 185, 186
- RAMSAY, SECOND-LIEUTENANT, 21
 Renwick, Lady George, 9
 —, Major G. A., 54
 —, Sir George, 2
 Ribaillet Camp, 83, 84
 Richardson, Lieutenant W. T., 61
 Riding School, Oramlington, 14
 Ritson, Colonel W. H., V.D., 1, 3, 31,
 35, 49
 —, —, awarded C.M.G., 40
 Rose, Major T. P. A., 21
 Rosières, 77
 Royal Fusiliers, 11th Battalion, 26,
 27
 Royal Grammar School, 4, 5, 187
 Royal Inniskilling Fusiliers, 30
 Royal Scots, 5th/6th Battalion, 52
 Rycroft, Major-General, 18, 47, 50,
 56
- "SACKVILLE," 39
 Sanghen, 90
 Saunders, Lieutenant K., 11
 Savill, O.S.M., 29
 Savy Wood, 74
 Schwaben Redoubt, 56, 201
 Scully, Lieutenant-Colonel A. J.,
 M.C., 70, 76, 89
 Senlis, St George's Day, 38
 Serre, 58, 64, 203
 Simm, Lieutenant W. P., 21
 Skinner Street, 44
 Southern, J., 8
 Staff-rides at Pierregot, 38
 Steenvoorde, 78
 Stephenson, Robert, 2
 St Quentin, French attack, 74
 St George's Sector, 83
- Strike, Arthur, 6
 "Surplus" sent to depôt, 21
- TALBOT, MAJOR J., D.L., 5, 188
 Tanner, Lieutenant, 66
 Teall Cottages, 88, 89
 Temperley, Major R., O.B.E., T.D.,
 D.L., 1, 2, 229
 Ten Tree Alley, 65
 The Bluff, 46
 The Growler, 12, 189
 Thierval, 31, 39, 45, 57, 200, 201,
 202
 Thompson, Major, 92
 Thuillier, Brigadier-General, 17
 Townsend, Lieutenant, 83
 Turco Farm, 87
 Tyneside Scottish, 12
- UNIFORMS, grey, 6
 —, khaki, 11
- VADENCOURT WOOD, 39
 Varennes, 46
 Villers Bocage, 69
 Viner, W., 6
 Vlamertinghe, 87
 Voyennes, 72
- WADN, O., illustrates *The Growler*,
 192
 Wagon Road, 65, 66
 Wake, Captain T., becomes
 Adjutant, 62
 Wanton destruction by Germans, 73
 Warkworth, Battle of, 11
 Warloy, 41
 —, "La Ruche," 55
 Warvillers, 70
 Waters, Sergeant, 52
 Weldon, Sergeant, 46
 Welford, Private, 27
 West Yorks, 2nd/6th Battalion,
 receive baptism of fire, 67
 Wickham, Second-Lieutenant, 41
 Wilson, Private A., 27
 Worthington, Captain R. H., M.C.,
 62
- YATMAN, BRIGADIER-GENERAL O.,
 C.M.G., D.S.O., 19, 34, 59
 Young, Captain A. O., 39, 45
 Ypres Salient, 87
 Yser Canal, 81
- ZEGGERS CAPPEL, 86, 87



SCALE: Side of each square = 1/4

REFERENCE: $\frac{1}{2}$ represents a "pill-box"
(only small area)

YPRI

Fe

Front held by Battalion

